



## 12 Affidavit

13 Je soussigné, Robin Leboucher, déclare par la présente que le travail présenté dans  
14 ce manuscrit est mon propre travail, réalisé sous la direction scientifique de Justine  
15 Serrano, dans le respect des principes d'honnêteté, d'intégrité et de responsabilité  
16 inhérents à la mission de recherche. Les travaux de recherche et la rédaction de ce  
17 manuscrit ont été réalisés dans le respect à la fois de la charte nationale de déontologie  
18 des métiers de la recherche et de la charte d'Aix-Marseille Université relative à la lutte  
19 contre le plagiat.

20 Ce travail n'a pas été précédemment soumis en France ou à l'étranger dans une  
21 version identique ou similaire à un organisme examinateur.

22  
23 Fait à Marseille le 28 août 2023

24  
25  




27 Cette œuvre est mise à disposition selon les termes de la [Licence Creative Commons](https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/)  
28 [Attribution - Pas d'Utilisation Commerciale - Pas de Modification 4.0 International](https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0/).

# Liste de publications et participation aux conférences

## Liste des publications réalisées dans le cadre du projet de thèse :

- R. Leboucher, A. Martini, A. Rostomyan, and J. Serrano, Search for lepton-flavor-violating  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decays in Belle II data, Belle II Internal Note, Jul. 2023, [BELLE2-NOTE-PH-2023-034](#)
- R. Leboucher, K. Adamczyk, L. Aggarwal, et al., Measurement of the cluster position resolution of the Belle II Silicon Vertex Detector, NIMA, vol. 1033, Jun. 2022, p. 166 746. doi : [10.1016/j.nima.2022.166746](#)
- G. Casarosa, G. Dujany, C. Finck, et al., Measurement of the SVD Cluster Position Resolution, Belle II Internal Note, Mar. 2022, [BELLE2-NOTE-TE-2022-005](#)
- R. Leboucher, J. Serrano, L. Zani, and F. Tenchini, Good track selection for tau events, Belle II Internal Note, Jun. 2020, [BELLE2-NOTE-PH-2020-029](#)

## Participation aux conférences et écoles d'été au cours de la période de thèse :

### Conférences :

- **The 21st International Conference on B-Physics at Frontier Machines, "BEAUTY 2023"**, Jul. 6th 2023, *Clermont-Ferrand, France*, Title : *Dark matter and tau results at Belle II.*
- **45<sup>th</sup> Belle II General Meeting (B2GM)**, Jun. 7th 2023, *Nagoya (online), Japan*, Shared talk with A. Martini (Desy, Hamburg, Germany), Title : *Status of the  $\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\mu$  lepton flavour violation decays searches at Belle II.*
- **Annual workshop of Groupement de Recherche "Intensity Frontier" (GdR-Inf)**, Nov. 4th 2022, *Lyon, France*, Shared talk with L. Polat (CPPM, Marseille, France), Title : *Overview of tau lepton flavour violating decays at Belle II.*
- **Annual workshop of Groupement de Recherche "Intensity Frontier" (GdR-Inf)**, Nov. 17th 2021 *Orsay, France*, Shared talk with L. Martel (IPHC, Strasbourg, France), Title : *Measurements of the cluster position resolution of the Belle II Silicon Vertex Detector.*
- **The 30th International Workshop on Vertex Detectors**, Sep. 27th 2021, *Online Organised by University of Oxford, United Kingdom*, Title : *Measurements of the*

61 *cluster position resolution of the Belle II Silicon Vertex Detector.*

62 **Ecoles d'été :**

- 63 • **IN2P3 School of Statistics 2021**, May 2022, *Carry-le-Rouet, France* by members  
64 of Institut national de physique nucléaire et de physique des particules.
- 65 • **2021 Belle II Physics Week : Starter Kit**, Nov. 2021 *Rome, Italy* by members of  
66 the Belle II experiment.

# Résumé

67

68 Mot-clefs : Physique des Particules; Recherche de nouvelle physique; Violation de  
69 la saveur leptonique; Désintégration du lepton tau; Résolution spatiale; Détecteur de  
70 vertex

71 Les désintégrations violant la saveur des leptons sont considérées comme l'un des  
72 moyens les plus efficaces de rechercher de la physique au-delà du modèle standard,  
73 car elles ne sont pas autorisées dans le modèle standard de la physique des particules.  
74 Un certain nombre de modèles de nouvelle physique prédisent que les fractions  
75 d'embranchement de  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  sont juste en dessous des limites expérimentales  
76 actuelles.

77 L'expérience Belle II, qui opère au laboratoire KEK au Japon, a déjà enregistré une  
78 luminosité de  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  entre 2019 et 2022 à l'énergie de résonance des mésons  $\Upsilon(4S)$   
79  $\sqrt{s} = 10,58 \text{ GeV}$  et  $\Upsilon(5S)$ . De plus Belle II fournit un environnement idéal pour étudier  
80 les désintégrations de tau en raison de son environnement propre et de la section  
81 efficace élevée de  $\tau^- \tau^+$ .

82 Cette thèse présente une recherche de désintégration  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  dans les évé-  
83 nements  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \tau^+ \tau^-$ . La stratégie est basée sur une reconstruction "non étiquetée"  
84 d'un tau en trois muons, tandis que le tau de charge opposée n'est pas contraint  
85 afin de maximiser l'efficacité de la sélection du signal. Pour rejeter le bruit de fond,  
86 une stratégie en trois étapes est adoptée, basée sur des variables d'identification des  
87 muons, des sélections préliminaires et des arbres de décision boostés, qui prennent  
88 comme entrées des variables cinématiques, topologiques et d'autres variables liées à  
89 l'événement. Le rejet du bruit de fond est optimisé à l'aide d'échantillons simulés par  
90 Monte-Carlo afin de minimiser la figure de mérite de Punzi. Après avoir déterminé le  
91 nombre attendu de données et l'incertitude systématique, la limite supérieure atten-  
92 due des rapports d'embranchement  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  est estimée à  $1.56 \times 10^{-8}$  à 90% de  
93 niveau de confiance en utilisant  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ . On s'attend, donc à ce que la limite de Belle  
94 établie à  $2.1 \times 10^{-8}$  puisse être améliorée avec la moitié de sa luminosité.

95 En outre, la thèse comprend également une mesure de la résolution spatiale du  
96 détecteur de vertex en utilisant des capteurs qui se chevauchent. Les événements de  
97 type  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+$  sont sélectionnés pour ne conserver que le cas où une particule  
98 a laissé deux impacts dans la même couche du détecteur. La méthode estime que la  
99 résolution spatiale est approximativement comprise entre  $15 \mu\text{m}$  et  $32 \mu\text{m}$  en fonction  
100 de la couche et du côté du détecteur.

# 101 Abstract

102 Keywords: Particle physics; Search for New Physics; Lepton Flavour Violation; Tau  
103 lepton decays; Spatial resolution; Vertex detector

104 Lepton flavour violating decays are considered one of the most effective ways to  
105 search for physics beyond the standard model, as they are not allowed in the Standard  
106 Model of particle physics. A number of new physics models predict that the branching  
107 fractions of  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  are just below the current experimental limits.

108 The Belle II experiment, which operates at the KEK laboratory in Japan, has already  
109 collected a luminosity of  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  between 2019 and 2022 at the  $\Upsilon(4S)$   $\sqrt{s} = 10.58 \text{ GeV}$   
110 and  $\Upsilon(5S)$  mesons resonance energies. In addition, Belle II provides an ideal environ-  
111 nment to study tau decays due to its clean environment and high  $\tau^- \tau^+$  cross-section.

112 This thesis presents a search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decays in  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \tau^+ \tau^-$  events. The  
113 strategy is based on an "untagged" reconstruction of one tau going into three muons,  
114 while the oppositely charged tau is left unconstrained to maximize the signal selec-  
115 tion efficiency. A three-step strategy is adopted to reject background based on muon  
116 identification variables, cut-based selections, and boosted decision trees, which take  
117 kinematic, topological, and other event-related variables as inputs. The background  
118 rejection is optimized using Monte-Carlo simulated samples to minimize Punzi's  
119 figure of merit. After determining the expected number of data and the systematic un-  
120 certainty, the expected upper limit on  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  branching fractions is estimated  
121 to be  $1.56 \times 10^{-8}$  at 90% confidence level using  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ . Thus, the limit of Belle that  
122 reached  $2.1 \times 10^{-8}$  is expected to be improved with half of the luminosity.

123 Moreover, the thesis also includes a measurement of the vertex detector spatial  
124 resolution using overlapping sensors. The  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+$  data event is selected to  
125 keep only the case where a particle has left two hits in the same detector layer. The  
126 method estimates the spatial resolution to be approximately between  $15 \mu\text{m}$  and  
127  $32 \mu\text{m}$ , depending on the layer and the sensor side.

# 128 **Résumé Long**

## 129 **Le modèle standard et la violation de la saveur** 130 **leptonique**

131 Le modèle standard de la physique des particules est une théorie développée au  
132 20e siècle pour expliquer les constituants fondamentaux de la nature et la manière  
133 dont ils interagissent les uns avec les autres [1]. Au fil du temps, de nombreux résultats  
134 expérimentaux ont confirmé l'exactitude des prédictions du modèle standard concer-  
135 nant les mécanismes à l'échelle subatomique. Cette théorie repose sur la description  
136 des particules élémentaires par des champs répondant aux propriétés de la relativité  
137 restreinte et de la mécanique quantique. Deux types de particules se distinguent : les  
138 fermions et les bosons. Les fermions se répartissent en quarks (up, down, strange,  
139 charm, top et beauty) qui composent le noyaux atomique et en leptons chargés (élec-  
140 trons, muons et tauons) et neutres (neutrinos électronique, muonic et tauic). Les  
141 bosons comprennent les bosons jauge, médiateurs des trois forces fondamentales, et  
142 enfin le boson de Higgs responsable de la masse intrinsèque des particules. Il existe  
143 aussi des antiparticules qui ont les mêmes propriétés que les particules usuelles mais  
144 avec des nombres quantiques opposées.

145 Toutefois le modèle standard faillit dans la description de plusieurs phénomènes  
146 observés, avec entre autres :

- 147 • l'existence de la matière noire et de l'énergie sombre, prouvée par des observa-  
148 tions en astrophysiques et cosmologie,
- 149 • l'unification de l'interaction gravitationnelle avec les autres interactions décrites  
150 par la théorie quantique des champs,
- 151 • l'asymétrie d'abondance entre la matière et l'antimatière dans l'univers,
- 152 • la faible masse des neutrinos introduite par le phénomène d'oscillation des  
153 neutrinos entre les saveurs électroniques, muoniques et tauiques.

154 Ces phénomènes conduisant les physiciens à suggérer que le modèle standard est une  
155 "théorie effective", limitée à un certain domaine d'énergie, tandis qu'une théorie plus  
156 générale l'engloberait. Dans ce cadre sont développés de nombreux modèles allant  
157 au-delà du modèle standard, aussi appelés "nouvelle physique", afin de pallier ces  
158 lacunes. Ces modèles de nouvelle physique introduisent des champs quantiques addi-  
159 tionnels, avec éventuellement de nouvelles symétries de jauge, dans le lagrangien du  
160 modèle standard qui décrit les interactions entre particules. Ces nouvelles particules

161 existeraient à des énergies supérieures à celles explorées de nos jours mais joueraient  
 162 un rôle dans des phénomènes observés aux énergies plus faibles.

163 Nous pouvons ranger les leptons en trois différentes saveurs, électronique, muo-  
 164 nique et tauique, chacune composée d'un lepton chargé et d'un neutrino. En associant  
 165 un nombre leptonique à chacune des trois saveurs, une propriété de conservation  
 166 de ces nombres apparaît accidentellement. Il existe toutefois une source de viola-  
 167 tion de cette saveur leptonique dans le secteur des neutrinos avec leurs oscillations.  
 168 Les oscillations de neutrinos sont aussi responsables d'une violation de la saveur  
 169 leptonique dans le secteur des leptons chargés, cependant de tels phénomènes ont  
 170 des taux d'apparition inférieurs à  $10^{-50}$  [2, 3]. Ce taux est loin des sensibilités des  
 171 expériences actuelles et même futures. L'observation de telles désintégrations violant  
 172 la saveur leptonique dans les collisionneurs de particule serait une preuve indéniable  
 173 de "nouvelle physique". De plus certains modèles comme ceux de la supersymétrie,  
 174 ou du boson de Higgs léger, ou de nouveaux bosons de jauges [4, 5] joueraient un  
 175 rôle dans la désintégration  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  et augmenteraient le taux d'apparition en  
 176 dessous de  $10^{-8}$ . A ces niveaux les expériences actuelles et futures seraient en capacité  
 177 d'observer de telles désintégrations.

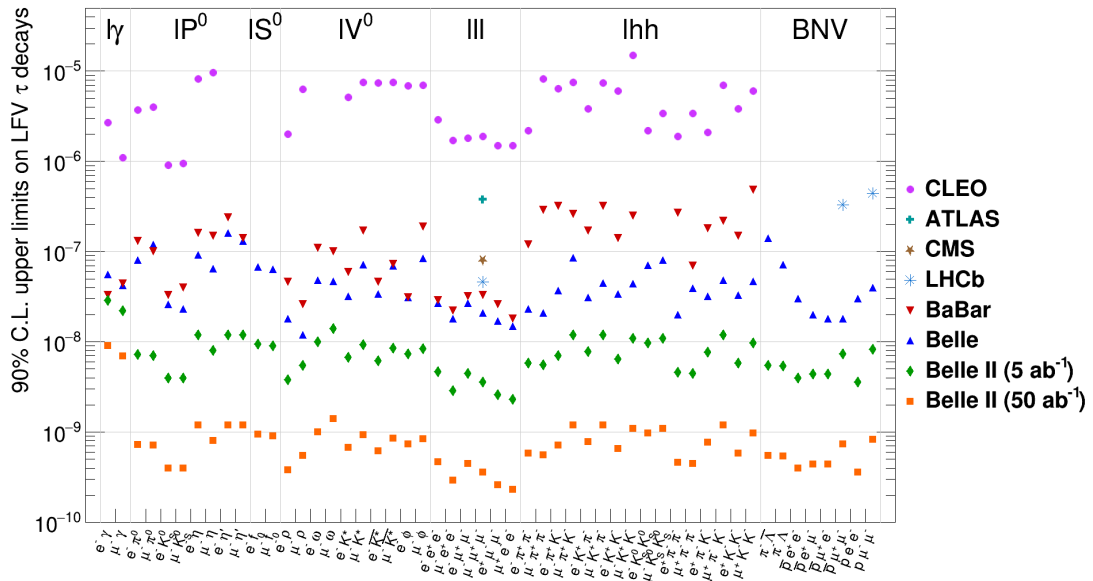


FIGURE 1. – Limites supérieures sur les rapports d'embranchements de diverses désin-  
 tégrations du tauon violant la saveur leptonique à un niveau de confiance  
 de 90%, établies par les expériences CLEO, ATLAS, CMS, LHCb, BABAR, Belle,  
 et estimées dans Belle II pour des luminosités intégrées de 5 (losanges verts) et  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  (carrés oranges). Extrait de [6].

178 Parmi les canaux de désintégration violant la saveur leptonique étudiés dans l'ex-  
 179 périence Belle II, certains sont qualifiés de "canaux d'or" par leur implication dans  
 180 de nouveaux modèles ou par leur faible contamination par le bruit de fond. Le canal  
 181  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  étudié dans cette thèse en fait partie grâce à son état final composé



182 exclusivement de leptons, le rendant facilement identifiable par rapport au bruit de  
 183 fond. L'expérience Belle II promet, sur le long terme, d'améliorer d'un à deux ordres  
 184 de grandeur les limites supérieures actuelles sur les rapports d'embranchement de  
 185 désintégrations du leptons tau violants la saveur (voir Figure 1). Les meilleurs mesures  
 186 à l'heure actuelle ont été établies par l'expérience Belle à  $2.1 \times 10^{-8}$  à 90% de niveau  
 de confiance comme présenté dans le Tableau 1.

TABLE 1. – Valeurs expérimentales sur la limite supérieure du taux de désintégration  
 du canal du tauon en trois leptons à 90% de niveau de confiance établies  
 par les expériences *BABAR* [7], Belle [8] et celles du Large Hadron Collider [9,  
 10, 11]. Les valeurs présentées sont des multiples de  $10^8$ .

Mode	Belle	Babar	LHCb	ATLAS	CMS
$\mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$	2.1	3.3	4.6	3.8	2.9
$e^- e^+ e^-$	2.7	2.9	-	-	-
$e^- \mu^+ \mu^-$	2.7	3.2	-	-	-
$e^- e^+ \mu^-$	1.8	2.2	-	-	-
$e^+ \mu^- \mu^-$	1.7	2.6	-	-	-
$\mu^+ e^- e^-$	1.5	1.8	-	-	-

187

## 188 L'expérience Belle II

189 L'expérience Belle II [12] est menée au laboratoire KEK de Tsukuba, au Japon. Elle se  
 190 concentre sur l'étude des propriétés des mésons, qui sont des particules composées  
 191 d'un quark et d'un antiquark, notamment les mésons beaux, charme et les leptons  
 192 tau. L'objectif est de mesurer avec précision les propriétés du modèle standard et de  
 193 rechercher de nouvelles formes de physique. Les installations se composent de deux  
 194 éléments principaux : le collisionneur d'électrons et de positrons SuperKEKB et le  
 195 détecteur Belle II, qui sont des mises à niveau des installations précédentes utilisées  
 196 dans l'expérience Belle de 1998 à 2010.

197 L'accélérateur de particules SuperKEKB produit des collisions entre électron et po-  
 198 sitron à une énergie de  $\sqrt{s} = 10.58 \text{ GeV}$  [13] dans le référentiel du centre de masse.  
 199 Cette énergie correspond à l'énergie de résonance du méson  $\Upsilon(4S)$  constitué d'une  
 200 paire de quark-antiquark beaux. Les propriétés du mésons  $B$ , produit lors des désinté-  
 201 grations du  $\Upsilon(4S)$ , notamment la recherche de violation de Charge et Parité dans ses  
 202 désintégrations, sont le sujet d'étude privilégié de Belle II. Cependant les collisions  
 203 réalisées à SuperKEKB produisent aussi d'autres particules en grande quantité comme  
 204 des paires de quarks plus légers ( $u\bar{u}$ ,  $d\bar{d}$ ,  $c\bar{c}$  et  $s\bar{s}$ ) mais aussi des paires de leptons :  
 205  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow e^+ e^-$  (diffusion Bhabha),  $\mu^- \mu^+$  ou  $\tau^- \tau^+$ . Ainsi Belle II est une expérience par-  
 206 faitement adaptée à l'étude des leptons tau avec une section efficace de production  
 207 de  $\tau^- \tau^+$  à 0.919nb proche de celle du méson  $\Upsilon(4S)$  à 1.110nb. Pour atteindre l'éner-  
 208 gie de résonance  $\Upsilon(4S)$ , les électrons et positrons sont accélérés dans deux anneaux

209 circulaires avant leur collision, le [Low Energy Ring \(LER\)](#) où les positrons atteignent  
210 une énergie de 4 GeV et le [High Energy Ring \(HER\)](#) où les électrons sont accélérés à  
211 7 GeV. La différence d'énergie crée un "boost" pour les particules produites durant la  
212 collision et permet de les propulser dans une direction privilégiée (l'axe du faisceau  
213 dans le sens des électrons) dans le référentiel du laboratoire. Cette direction privilégiée  
214 permet d'obtenir une meilleure séparation spatiale de leurs désintégrations.

215 SuperKEKB se distingue des autres accélérateurs dans le monde par sa lumino-  
216 sité instantanée record et dont l'objectif est d'atteindre  $\mathcal{L} = 6 \times 10^{35} \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$  soit  
217 30 fois celle enregistrée par KEKB. Cette objectif est possible grâce à une avancée  
218 technologique récente réduisant la taille du faisceau dans lequel les particules sont  
219 concentrées, tout en imposant une intensité électrique environ 1.5 fois plus grande.  
220 A terme l'expérience Belle II a pour objectif de proposer un échantillon de données  
221 d'une luminosité intégrée de  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ , permettant des mesures d'une précision jamais  
222 obtenue.

223 Le détecteur Belle II se présente comme une amélioration des composants et tech-  
224 nologies éprouvés par l'expérience Belle. Les différentes améliorations visent à faire  
225 face à l'augmentation de la luminosité instantanée et ainsi à l'augmentation du bruit  
226 de fond et du taux d'occupation attendus. Le détecteur Belle II est composé de mul-  
227 tiples sous-détecteurs disposés en cylindres imbriqués couvrants un large angle solide  
228 allant de  $17$  à  $150^\circ$  pour les couches les plus internes. Belle II se distingue grâce à  
229 son architecture, à ses déclencheurs spécifiques et par la connaissance précise des  
230 états initiaux et finaux des collisions  $e^+e^-$ , permettant ainsi d'avoir une très bonne  
231 reconstruction des processus à faible multiplicité ou impliquants de l'énergie man-  
232 quante. Cela permet à Belle II de proposer un environnement idéal pour l'étude des  
233 propriétés du lepton  $\tau^-$  ou des désintégrations avec neutrinos. Pour mener à bien  
234 son rôle, le détecteur possède différents constituants qui permettent de reconstruire  
235 la trajectoire des particules par combinaison des points d'impact en "traces" lors du  
236 tracking, de restituer leur quadri vecteur impulsion et enfin d'identifier la particule.  
237 Les sous-détecteurs de Belle II des couches les plus internes aux plus externes sont :

- 238 • le détecteur de vertex en silicium ([VerteX Detector \(VXD\)](#)), divisé en deux couches  
239 de pixels ([PiXel Detector \(PXD\)](#)) et quatre couches de capteurs à bande de si-  
240 licium double face ([Silicon Vertex Detector \(SVD\)](#)). La fonction du [VXD](#) est de  
241 reconstruire le point de production des particules secondaires<sup>1</sup>, mais aussi de  
242 participer à la reconstruction des traces, et à l'identification des particules (avec  
243 la mesure du dépôt d'énergie).
- 244 • la chambre à dérive centrale ([Central Drift Chamber \(CDC\)](#)), contenant un réseau  
245 de fil sous tension dans une atmosphère gazeuse. Ce réseau divise le volume en  
246 "cellules". Lorsqu'une particule chargée traverse une cellule, elle ionise le gaz  
247 et les électrons arrachés créent un signal dans les fils. La [CDC](#) permet ainsi de  
248 reconstruire les traces et impulsions<sup>2</sup> des particules, ou encore de donner des

---

1. Les particules secondaires sont issues de la désintégration des particules produites lors de la collision.

2. Les particules soumises au champ magnétique produit par un solénoïde (1.5T) décrivent une trajectoire parabolique permettant de mesurer leur impulsion.

- 249 informations sur leur identité en mesurant la perte d'énergie dans le gaz.
- 250 • le système d'identification des particules, est divisé en un compteur de temps  
251 de propagation (**Time-Of-Propagation (TOP)**) pour la partie cylindrique, ainsi  
252 qu'un détecteur Tcherenkov (**Aerogel Ring-Imaging Cherenkov (ARICH)**) dans le  
253 couvercle avant du détecteur (pour couvrir les particules boostées). En traversant  
254 le milieu de diffusion les particules émettent des cônes de photons par effet  
255 Tcherenkov. Les deux détecteurs déterminent la vitesse de la particule à l'aide  
256 du temps de diffusion des photons émis pour le **TOP** et de l'angle d'ouverture  
257 du cône de photon pour l'**ARICH**. En combinant cette vitesse avec l'impulsion  
258 on détermine la masse invariante de la particule émettrice.
  - 259 • le calorimètre électromagnétique (**Electromagnetic Calorimeter (ECL)**), collecte  
260 et mesure l'énergie déposée dans ses cristaux par les photons qui peuvent repré-  
261 senter une part importante de l'énergie dégagée dans les collisions, ou encore  
262 par les électrons, qu'il permettra donc de distinguer des autres hadrons chargés.
  - 263 • le détecteur de K-long et de muons ( **$K_L$  and Muon detector (KLM)**), constitué de  
264 scintillateurs permettant d'identifier ces particules.

265 Les programmes contrôlant le fonctionnement des différents détecteurs, des simu-  
266 lations, de la prise de données et de la reconstruction des événements voulus sont  
267 centralisés dans le logiciel **Belle II Analysis Software Framework (basf2)**, le logiciel  
268 d'analyse spécifique à Belle II. Une production officielle des échantillons de simula-  
269 tions **Monte-Carlo (MC)** et des données collectées est mise en place. Pour cette analyse  
270 les données traitées correspondent à des échantillons à l'énergie de la résonance  $\Upsilon(4S)$   
271 ( $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ ), off résonance (60 MeV en dessous de l' $\Upsilon(4S)$ ), et à la résonance  $\Upsilon(5S)$  pour  
272 un total de  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  enregistrés entre 2019 et 2022, avant le premier long arrêt visant à  
273 mettre à jour les installations.

## 274 **Mesure de la résolution spatiale du détecteur de** 275 **vertex de Belle II**

276 Le détecteur **SVD** joue un rôle important dans la reconstruction de la trajectoire  
277 d'une particule. Afin de fournir une reconstruction des traces de la meilleure qualité  
278 possible, il est crucial d'estimer avec précision la résolution spatiale du détecteur. En  
279 effet elle intervient dans l'ajustement de la trace, mais elle permet aussi de propager  
280 les incertitudes de la position d'impact dans le calcul des paramètres de la trace.

281 Les quatre couches du **SVD** [14] sont composées de capteurs à bandes de silicium  
282 regroupés en modules disposés en couches cylindriques grâce à une disposition en  
283 moulin, Figure 2. Afin de capter les particules boostées, des modules trapézoïdaux  
284 sont disposés en bout de couches sauf pour la 3e couche. Les deux bandes de silicium  
285 sont disposées orthogonalement le long des capteurs de manière à mesurer la position  
286 selon la coordonnée  $r\phi$  pour les bandes u/P et  $z$  pour les bandes v/N.

287 Lorsqu'une particule chargée traverse un capteur, plusieurs bandes sont activées et  
288 regroupées en grappe. Les propriétés de chacune des grappes, Figure 2 regroupent :

- la position de la grappe  $m$  obtenue comme le centre de gravité de toutes les positions  $X_i$  des bandes la constituant pondérées par leur charge collectée  $S_i$ ,  

$$m = \frac{\sum_i X_i S_i}{\sum_i S_i};$$
- la position  $t$  et son erreur  $\sigma_t$  sont définies à partir de l'intersection entre le capteur et la trace. Elles sont déterminées de manière non-biaisée, signifiant que la grappe considérée est ignorée pour reconstruire la trace considérée;
- la vraie position  $x$  est l'intersection entre le capteur et la trajectoire réelle de la particule. La trajectoire réelle est seulement disponible dans les simulations.

La résolution spatiale des grappes est définie comme étant la variance du vrai résidu  $zeps = m - xpos$ . Cependant cette définition est applicable seulement dans les simulations ou la vraie position de la particule est connue. Après certaines approximations la résolution spatiale des grappes peut être déterminée dans les données en utilisant le résidu  $R = m - t$  entre les positions de la grappe et celle de la trace.

Dans cette thèse, une mesure de la résolution spatiale des grappes a été effectuée en utilisant une nouvelle méthode à Belle II, dite de recouvrement ou de paire, basée sur le recouvrement des modules d'une même couche, initialement proposée par CMS [15]. Cette méthode est réalisable grâce à l'arrangement en moulin des modules pour former une couche.

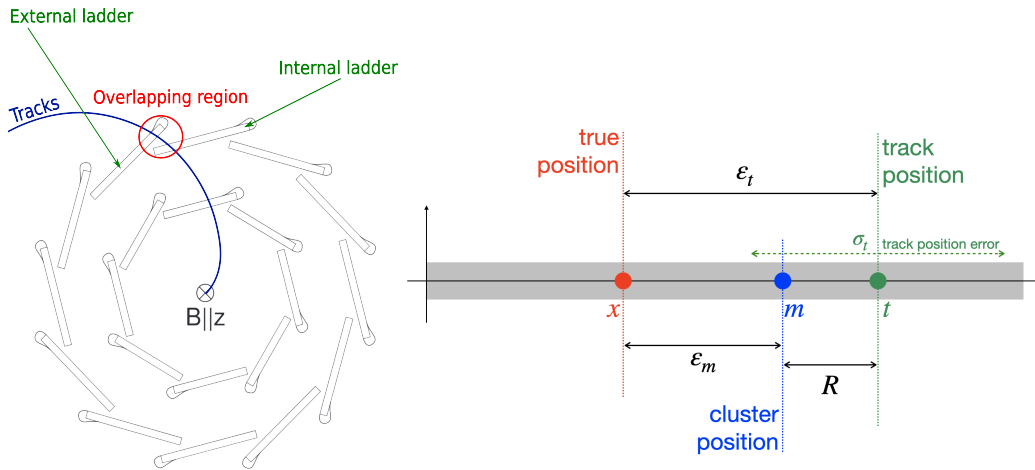


FIGURE 2. – Vue transversale (direction  $r\phi$ ) du SVD illustrant la structure en moulin et le recouvrement des modules dans une même couche (Gauche). Schémas des différentes positions et résidus liés à une activation d'un capteur (Droite).

306

Dans la méthode des recouvrements, les traces sont reconstruites, en n'acceptant que celles qui intersectent deux capteurs de deux modules consécutifs d'une même couche (donc dans la région de recouvrements des modules), Figure 2. Le résidu  $m - t$  est déterminé sur chacun des deux modules (internes et externes) qui se chevauchent. Puis les résidus du module interne et externe sont soustraits pour définir un double résidu  $\Delta R$ . Une correction est appliquée au double résidu pour tenir compte de la géométrie des modules. La résolution par la méthode des recouvrements  $\sigma_{cl}^{\text{recouvrement}}$

est obtenue par l'ajustement du double résidu par une distribution t-Student  $T$  définie par les paramètres suivant : le nombre de degrés de liberté  $\nu$ ; la moyenne de la distribution  $\mu$ , et la variance  $\sigma^2$ . La variance de cette distribution est déterminée comme étant le carré de la demi-distance sigma-68 entre les 16e et 84e quantiles :

$$\sigma_{cl}^{\text{recouvrement}} = \text{sigma-68}(T(X, \nu, \mu, \sigma)). \quad (0.1)$$

307 L'exploitation des modules se recouvrant a l'avantage d'annuler la contribution de  
 308 l'erreur sur la position des traces, et d'être peu sensible à l'effet de Coulomb. Mais aussi  
 309 de dissocier la contribution de la précision de l'ajustement des traces et la contribution  
 310 de la résolution spatiale des grappes. Cependant elle limite les angles d'incidence de  
 311 la trajectoire atteignable.

312 Les résultats obtenus par la méthode des recouvrements sont reportés dans la Fi-  
 313 gure 3, et dans le Tableau 2 [16]. En comparaison avec les autres méthodes essayées à  
 314 Belle II ("Event-by-event" et "Global"), la méthode des recouvrements donne généra-  
 315 lement une estimation moins bonne de la résolution spatiale à l'exception des bandes  
 v/N des couches les plus externes.

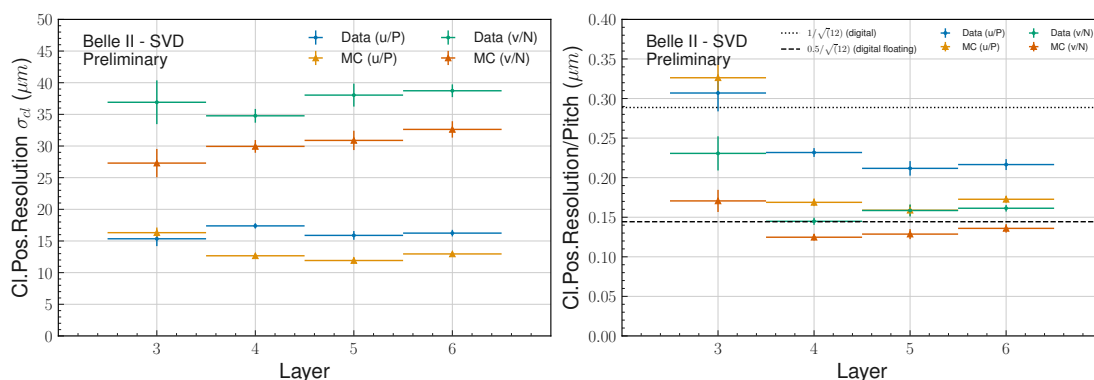


FIGURE 3. – La résolution spatiale des grappes (Gauche) et la résolution normalisée par l'espacement des bandes (Droite) sont calculées pour les côtés u/P et v/N de chaque couche du détecteur à partir de la méthode des recouvrements.

	Digital	EBE	Global	Pair
Layer 3 u/P ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	7	7	9	15
Layer 456 u/P ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	11	10	11	16-17
Layer 3 v/N ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	23	24	23	33
Layer 456 v/N ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	35	32	35	29-36

TABLE 2. – Résumé des résolutions spatiales obtenue avec les différentes méthodes essayées à Belle II [16].

## Recherche de désintégration $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ violant la saveur leptonique

Dans l'étude de la désintégration du  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  dans les données de Belle II, une nouvelle méthode de reconstruction non étiquetée est proposée pour les événements de paires de  $\tau^-$ , qui a été précédemment testée dans l'étude du canal de désintégration **Lepton Flavour Violation (LFV)**  $\tau \rightarrow \ell \phi$  ( $\ell = e, \mu$ ). Dans cette méthode, dite inclusive, les événements  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \tau^+ \tau^-$  sont reconstruits avec un lepton tau se désintégrant en trois muons (ce tau sera désigné comme signal) alors que le second tau de charge opposée (étiqueté) n'est pas restreint sur son mode de désintégration. Ceci se distingue des méthodes de reconstruction présentées par Belle [8] et BABAR [7], où le tau signal est reconstruit avec une désintégration en trois muons et le tau étiqueté est reconstruit avec une désintégration du modèle standard en un électron, ou muon ou pion [17]. Cette approche inclusive vise à améliorer l'efficacité de la sélection des signaux en tenant compte de tous les modes possibles de désintégration du second tau. Cependant, cette inclusivité introduit un bruit de fond supplémentaire qui doit être compensé par des critères de sélection efficaces pour maintenir des gains significatifs en matière de pureté des échantillons.

L'analyse repose sur les données expérimentales ainsi que des échantillons simulés de signal  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  et de bruit de fond. Afin d'être le plus général possible dans les modèles de nouvelle physique explorés, aucune contrainte sur le paramétrage de l'espace de phase du signal simulé n'est imposée.

Il est possible de définir une "région de signal" dans le plan bidimensionnel  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$ , où  $M_{3\mu}$  est la masse mesurée du tau reconstruit et  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  est la différence d'énergie entre le tau et le faisceau ( $\sqrt{s}$ ) dans le référentiel du centre de masse. En raison de l'absence de neutrinos (qui entraîne une perte d'énergie détectée) dans l'état final de  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ , la distribution du signal présente un pic autour de  $M_{3\mu} \approx 1,777 \text{ GeV}/c^2$  [13] (la masse du lepton tau) et  $\Delta E_{3\mu} \approx 0 \text{ GeV}$ . Ainsi, une région autour de ce pic est définie où il est plus probable de détecter une désintégration  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  dans les données. Les données dans cette région sont cachées jusqu'à la fin de l'analyse pour éviter tout biais humain dans l'obtention des résultats.

Afin d'assurer la reconstruction de trois muons provenant d'un lepton tau, les traces laissées par les particules dans le détecteur doivent satisfaire plusieurs prérequis :

- elles doivent provenir d'une zone proche de la région où les électrons et positrons se collisionnent,
- les particules chargées ayant une probabilité d'être un muon (*muonID*) supérieure à 0.5 sont identifiées comme muon,

les valeurs des coupures sur les variables d'identification sont volontairement faibles afin de permettre une optimisation de celle-ci par la suite.

Les éventuelles particules non chargées de l'événement, comme les photons et les pions neutres ( $\pi^0$ ), sont également reconstituées pour déterminer leur quantité, qui peut varier en fonction de la nature des particules produites après la collision,

358 ainsi que pour évaluer précisément les propriétés cinétiques et géométriques de  
 359 l'événement.

360 Afin de limiter la quantité de bruit de fond traitée, les données subissent un prétraitemen-  
 361 tement pour identifier les événements d'intérêt pour la recherche désintégrations du  
 362  $\tau^-$  violant la saveur leptonique. Cette sélection couvre une région du plan ( $M_{3\mu}; \Delta E_{3\mu}$ )  
 363 avec une excellente rétention du signal. A la reconstruction, des exigences sur la topo-  
 364 logie de l'événement sont imposées : un maximum de 6 traces doit être présent, et les  
 365 trois muons doivent être situés dans un seul hémisphère, dont l'axe est la direction de  
 366 la poussée totale de l'événement (thrust). De plus les événements doivent activer les  
 367 lignes de déclencheurs du détecteur [ECL](#) correspondant aux basses multiplicités ou  
 368 du détecteur [CDC](#). À cette étape la composition des échantillons simulés est résumée  
 dans le Tableau 3.

TABLE 3. – Taux de survie du signal et composition du bruit de fond pour  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$   
 dans les échantillons générés par simulation après la reconstruction des  
 événements  $e^+e^- \rightarrow \tau^- \tau^+$  avec un lepton tau se désintégrant selon  $\tau^- \rightarrow$   
 $\mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ .

	$\epsilon_{sig}^{abs}$	$N_{bkg}$	$N_{\tau\tau}$	$N_{q\bar{q}}$	$N_{B\bar{B}}$	$N_{lowm}$
train	34.30%	1803.70	7.98	830.10	0.70	964.92
test	34.35%	1819.67	6.15	842.73	1.23	969.56

369 Parmi les propriétés importantes afin de distinguer le signal du bruit de fond se  
 370 trouvent celles provenant du reste de l'événement ([Rest-of-Event \(ROE\)](#)). Ces proprié-  
 371 tés sont obtenues en utilisant toutes les particules chargées et neutres non utilisées  
 372 dans la reconstruction du  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ . Celles-ci sont nettoyées à l'aide de masque,  
 373 basé sur leur point d'origine, leur impulsion pour les particules chargées et sur leur  
 374 énergie pour les particules neutres.

376 Avant de procéder à l'optimisation du rejet du bruit de fond plusieurs régions  
 377 du plan ( $M_{3\mu}; \Delta E_{3\mu}$ ) sont définies. Les différentes régions sont définies à partir des  
 378 résolutions  $\delta$  des variables  $M_{3\mu}$  et  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  obtenues par un ajustement de courbe à  
 379 l'aide d'une gaussienne asymétrique. De cet ajustement sont extraits la moyenne  $\bar{\mu}$ , la  
 380 résolution gauche  $\delta^{\downarrow}$  et droite  $\delta^{\uparrow}$  des distributions des échantillons simulés de signal,  
 les valeurs sont résumées dans le Tableau 4. À partir de ces résolutions, sont définies

TABLE 4. – Résolutions obtenues avec l'ajustement des distributions  $M_{3\mu}$  et  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  et  
 utilisées comme unités pour définir les régions du signal.

Mode	Variable	Moyenne $\bar{\mu}$	Résolution à gauche $\delta^{down}$	Résolution à droite $\delta^{up}$
$\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$	$M_{3\mu} (MeV/c^2)$	$1777.35 \pm 0.07$	$4.80 \pm 0.07$	$4.44 \pm 0.06$
	$\Delta E_{3\mu} (MeV)$	$0.7 \pm 0.3$	$14.9 \pm 0.3$	$10.0 \pm 0.5$

381  
382  
383  
384  
385  
386  
387  
388  
389  
390  
391  
392  
393

différentes régions de taille et de forme différentes : rectangulaires ou elliptiques (avec une rotation d'angle  $\theta$  extrait à partir de la corrélation des deux variables).

- la région  $\pm 20\delta$  rectangulaire sert de référence pour l'optimisation des présélections et de l'apprentissage de l'algorithme de classification signal/bruit de fond,
- la région  $\pm 20\delta$  en  $M_{3\mu}$  et  $\pm 10\delta$  en  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  rectangulaire est employée comme bande pour confirmer que les variables simulées représentent correctement les données, dans ce cas-là les données sont dissimulées selon la région ci-dessous,
- la région  $\pm 5\delta$  rectangulaire est dissimulée dans les données pour éviter tout risque de biais,
- les régions  $\pm 3\delta$  elliptique et rectangulaire, où sont évalués le signal et le bruit de fond restant.

La première étape du rejet du bruit de fond consiste à affiner les valeurs de coupures sur la variable d'identification du muon  $muonID$  afin de garder une haute efficacité sur le signal. L'idée pour permettre cela est de trier les trois muons provenant du signal  $\tau^-$  selon leur valeur de  $muonID$  et de permettre une coupure différente selon leur rang (premier, deuxième et troisième) :

$$\mu ID_{premier} > 0.95, \quad (0.2)$$

$$\mu ID_{deuxieme} > 0.95, \quad (0.3)$$

$$\mu ID_{troisieme} > 0.5. \quad (0.4)$$

394  
395  
396  
397  
398  
399  
400  
401  
402  
403  
404  
405  
406  
407  
408  
409  
410  
411  
412

Une telle sélection permet de conserver une efficacité relative de 97% pour le signal et de 32% pour le bruit de fond contre respectivement 68% et 24% dans le cas où la coupure à 0.95 est imposée pour les trois muons. Le surplus de bruit de fond obtenu est aisément rejeté à l'aide de l'algorithme de classification.

La deuxième étape de la stratégie de rejet du bruit de fond repose sur les variables cinématiques et topologiques liées aux différentes particules (muons, tau, photons et  $\pi^0$ ), à l'énergie manquante, au ROE, ou à l'événement en général. Ces variables sont exploitées en définissant des sélections préliminaires, des présélections, et des variables d'entrée pour un algorithme d'apprentissage automatique [18] qui classe les événements en fonction de leur "probabilité" de ressembler à un signal. Cependant, les présélections ont un impact sur les performances de l'apprentissage de l'algorithme, l'objectif est donc de trouver la meilleure combinaison de présélections pour entraîner l'algorithme. Pour y parvenir, la méthode consiste à :

- Choisir un set de sélections préliminaires parmi un ensemble de présélection défini antérieurement. Les différents sets de présélection sont définis en cherchant à éliminer les contributions de bruit de fond à basse multiplicité facilement distinguable du signal sur un nombre réduit de variables. Les différents sets de sélections préliminaires ainsi que la composition des échantillons après application sont donnés dans le Tableau 5.



413 • Appliquer le set de présélection choisi puis effectuer l'apprentissage de l'algo-  
 414 rithme. Nous utilisons comme algorithme de classification un arbre de décision  
 415 boosté (**Boosted Decision Tree (BDT)**) issue de la bibliothèque XGBoost [18].  
 416 Celui-ci est entraîné sur les événements simulés de signal et de bruit de fond  $q\bar{q}$   
 417 et  $\tau^-\tau^+$ . En sortie du **BDT** nous obtenons pour chaque événement une variable  
 418 de vraisemblance de correspondre à du signal, illustré en Figure 4. Une coupure  
 419 est optimisée sur cette variable de sortie en maximisant la figure de mérite de  
 420 Punzi [19] dans la région du signal à  $5\delta$ .

421 Afin de valider les performances du **BDT**, les échantillons sont divisés en trois :  
 422 un échantillon d'entraînement, un de validation et un de test qui retranscrit  
 423 le rôle des données expérimentales dans le cadre de la simulation, c'est-à-dire  
 424 qu'il n'est consulté que pour l'obtention des résultats dans le **MC**. Cependant  
 425 pour conserver un nombre significatif d'événements de bruit de fond dans les  
 426 échantillons d'entraînement et de test, nous avons fait le choix de diviser les  
 427  $8 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  d'événements simulés en deux échantillons d'entraînement et de test  
 428 égaux ( $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ ). Puis l'échantillon d'entraînement est sous échantillonné à l'aide  
 429 d'une méthode de "k-folding" [20] pour obtenir des "folds" d'entraînement et  
 430 de validation.

431 Afin d'éviter les biais survenants par un surapprentissage du **BDT**, les hyperpara-  
 432 mètres sont optimisés à l'aide de la bibliothèque Optuna [21] en minimisant la  
 433 fonction logarithmique de perte des "folds" de validation.

434 Le processus est répété pour tout les différents sets de présélection et la combinaison  
 435 obtenant la figure de mérite de Punzi maximale, Figure 4 (droite) est conservée. Suivant  
 436 cette méthode la sélection permettant le rejet du bruit de fond est donnée dans le  
 437 Tableau 6.

438 L'efficacité du signal de la méthode de réjection du bruit de fond est de  $19.70_{-0.06}^{+0.06} \text{ stat}\%$   
 439 alors qu'il subsiste  $0.08_{-0.07}^{+0.21} \text{ stat}$  événements de bruit de fond estimé sur  $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$   
 440 d'échantillon de Test normalisé à la luminosité des données  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ .

441 Afin de valider notre stratégie de rejet du bruit de fond des vérifications sont né-  
 442 cessaires en comparant les échantillons de données et de simulation. En effet nos  
 443 simulations doivent toujours correctement représenter les données. Pour cela nous  
 444 réalisons une première comparaison, en utilisant la région des bandes latérales  $\pm 20\delta$   
 445 selon  $M_{3\mu}$  et  $\pm 10\delta$  selon  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  en prenant soin d'exclure la région à  $5\delta$  après avoir  
 446 appliqué les présélections pour vérifier que les variables utilisées dans le **BDT** repré-  
 447 sentent correctement les données. Le nombre d'événement après les présélections  
 448 dans les bandes latérales est de  $118.1_{-5.1}^{+9.8} \text{ stat}$  dans les simulations et de  $94.0_{-9.7}^{+10.7} \text{ stat}$   
 449 dans les données. Après le **BDT** le nombre d'événement tombe à  $3.3_{-0.7}^{+1.2} \text{ stat}$  dans les  
 450 simulations et  $7.0_{-2.6}^{+3.8} \text{ stat}$  dans les données. Les données et les simulations sont en  
 451 accord selon les erreurs statistiques.

452 Plusieurs méthodes pour estimer le nombre de bruit de fond dans les données ont  
 453 été testées en utilisant les bandes latérales. Nous avons retenu la méthode "ABCD" [22]  
 454 basé uniquement sur les données, celle-ci n'est pas sensible aux problèmes de des-  
 455 cription des données par les simulations. Dans cette méthode quatre régions, Figure 5,

TABLE 5. – Définition des différents sets de sélection préliminaires ainsi que leur efficacité sur le signal et la composition du bruit de fond survivant dans la région du signal  $\pm 20\delta$  après avoir appliqué la sélection sur le muonID défini plus tôt. Le nombre d'événements de bruit de fond est normalisé à la luminosité des données  $Y(4S)$ ,  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ . Les variables considérées pour les sélections préliminaires sont :  $\theta_{miss}^{CM}$  l'angle polaire de l'impulsion manquante, l'exposant  $CM$  dénote qu'une quantité est mesuré dans le référentiel de centre de masse;  $p_{miss}^{T,CM}$  la composante trasverse à l'axe du faisceau de l'impulsion manquante;  $E_{vis}^{CM}$  énergie visible;  $\Delta E_{ROE}$  la différence d'énergie entre le ROE et la collision.

Name	Preselection	$\epsilon_{sig}^{rel}$ (%)	$\epsilon_{sig}^{abs}$ (%)	$\epsilon_{bkg}^{rel}$ (%)	$N_{bkg}$	$N_{\tau\text{-pair}}$	$N_{q\bar{q}}$	$N_{B\bar{B}}$	$N_{lowm}$
Reference	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$	96.88	31.11	89.99	938.82	3.08	287.52	0	648.22
Set 1	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $0.89 < Thrust < 0.97$	95.48	30.67	30.83	321.64	2.96	270.87	0	47.82
Set 2	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $0.935 < Thrust_{\tau ROE}$ $0.95 > Thrust_{\tau ROE}$	96.35	30.94	61.78	644.50	2.58	244.94	0	396.97
Set 3	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $E_{vis}^{CM} < 10.$	90.54	29.08	14.89	155.30	2.98	127.81	0	24.52
Set 4	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $E_{miss}^{CM} > 0.6$	90.22	28.98	14.69	153.29	2.91	125.85	0	24.52
Set 5	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $p_{miss}^{T,CM} > 0.4$	91.12	29.26	15.89	165.74	2.77	135.08	0	27.90
Set 6	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $M_{ROE} < 2.2$ $-5. < \Delta E_{ROE} < -0.2$	90.76	29.15	16.49	172.08	2.62	106.08	0	63.39

TABLE 6. – Liste de sélections appliquées pour rejeter le bruit de fond après optimisation.

$\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$
$muID_{lead} > 0.95$
$muID_{sub} > 0.95$
$muID_{third} > 0.5$
$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$
$0.89 < thrust < 0.97$
$p^{BDT}(Signal) > 0.89$
$3\delta$ ellipse region

456 sont définie par :

- 457 • A, en dehors de la région du signal à  $\pm 5\delta$  et probabilité de sortie du BDT entre

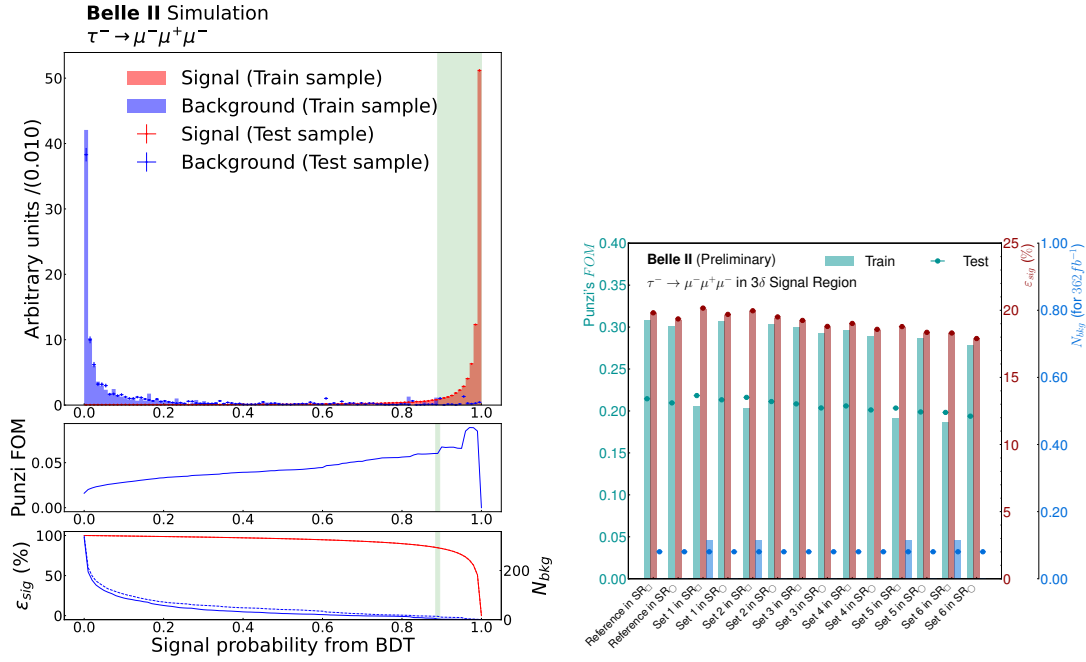


FIGURE 4. – À gauche : Probabilité de vraisemblance au signal obtenue en sortie du **BDT** estimée sur les échantillons d'Entraînement et de Test dans une région du signal à  $\pm 20\delta$ . Les deux graphiques du dessous représentent respectivement la figure de mérite de Punzi et les efficacités du signal (rouge) et de bruit de fond (bleue) en fonction de la valeur de coupure. La région verte représente la région gardée après coupure sur le **BDT**, cette région est optimisée pour maximiser la figure de mérite de Punzi dans l'échantillon de validation dans une région à  $\pm 5\delta$ .  
 À droite : Figure de mérite de Punzi (cyan), efficacité du signal (rouge) et nombre de bruits de fond survivant (bleue) pour les échantillons d'Entraînement et de Test pour les différentes combinaisons de pré-sélection et de **BDT**.

- 458 0.2 et 0.5,  
 459 • **B**, dans la région du signal à  $\pm 3\delta$  et probabilité de sortie du **BDT** entre 0.2 et 0.5,  
 460 • **C**, en dehors de la région du signal à  $\pm 5\delta$  et probabilité de sortie du **BDT** supé-  
 461 rieur à 0.89,  
 462 • **D**, dans la région du signal à  $\pm 3\delta$  et probabilité de sortie du **BDT** supérieur à  
 463 0.89.

464 Le but est d'estimer le nombre de donnée dans la région **D** par extrapolation depuis  
 465 la région **C** et un facteur de transfert **B/A**,  $N_D^{attendue} = N_C \times (N_B/N_A)$ . Nous obtenons  
 466 ainsi  $0.50^{+1.38}_{-0.50}$  *stat* événement attendu.

La limite supérieure attendue sur le rapport d'embranchement de la désintégration

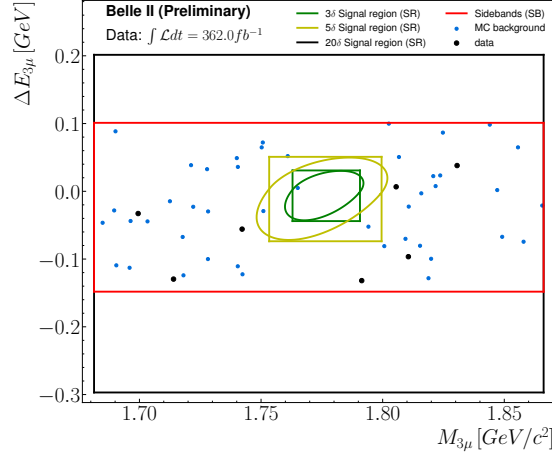


FIGURE 5. – Distribution des Événements de données (noir) et de bruit de fond simulés (bleu) survivants aux sélections de rejet du bruit de fond dans le plan de la distance elliptique au pic ( $M_{3\mu}$ ,  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ ) et de la variable de sortie du BDT. Le lignage rouge délimite les différentes régions ABCD de la méthode. Les données restent dissimulées dans la région D.

$\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  selon :

$$\mathcal{B}^{LS}(\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-) = \frac{N^{attendu} - N^{observe}}{2L\sigma_{\tau\tau}\varepsilon_{3\mu}}, \quad (0.5)$$

467 où  $L$  est la luminosité intégrée,  $\sigma_{\tau\tau}$  la section efficace de production des paires  
 468  $\tau^- \tau^+$ ,  $\varepsilon_{3\mu}$  l'efficacité de sélection du signal et respectivement  $N^{attendu}$  et  $N^{observe}$   
 469 les nombres d'événements dans les données attendues avec la méthode "ABCD" et observés. Les données étant toujours dissimulées, nous faisons l'hypothèse que

TABLE 7. – Incertitudes systématiques relatives sur les différentes quantités de la formule du rapport d'embranchement.

Quantité affectée	Source	Valeur
$\varepsilon_{\ell\ell\ell}$	Indentification des leptons	2.39%
	Efficacité du tracking	0.72%
	Efficacité des tiggers	1.0%
$N_{exp}$	Correction de l'impulsion	5.0%
$L$	Luminosité	0.6%
$\sigma_{\tau\tau}$	Section efficace de production de $\tau^- \tau^+$	0.3%

470  $N^{observe} = 0$ . La limite supérieure est calculée en utilisant la méthode  $CL_s$  [23] implé-  
 471 mentée dans le langage RooStats. Les incertitudes systématiques sur les différentes  
 472 quantités du rapport d'embranchement sont résumées dans le Tableau 7. Les résultats  
 473 de la méthode  $CL_s$  sont représentés en Figure 6. La limite supérieure attendue à un  
 474

475 niveau de confiance de 90% est de  $1.77 \times 10^{-8}$  en utilisant les  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  de données  
 476 à  $\Upsilon(4S)$  et de  $1.51 \times 10^{-8}$  en utilisant toute la statistique de Belle II,  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ . Si une  
 477 telle limite supérieure est conservée après dévoilement des données, nous serions en  
 478 capacité d'établir une nouvelle référence jusque-là établie par Belle à  $2.1 \times 10^{-8}$  à 90%  
 de niveau de confiance.

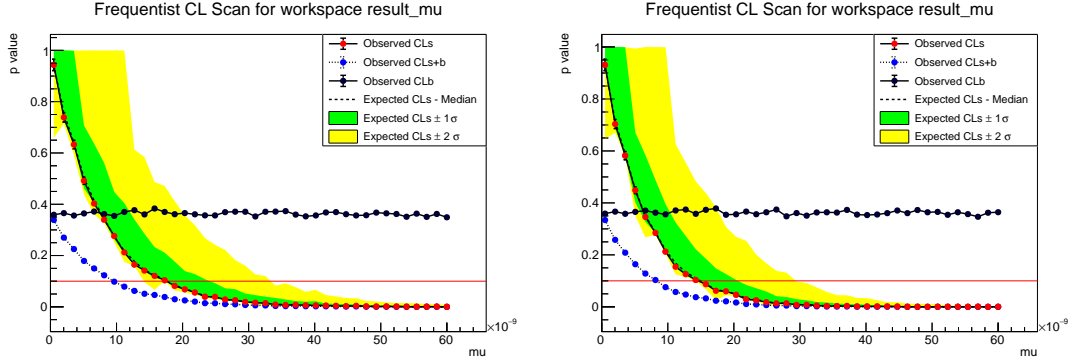


FIGURE 6. –  $CL_s$  attendu en fonction de la limite supérieure sur les rapports d'em-  
 branchement de  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  pour une luminosité de  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  à droite  
 et  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  à gauche. La droite horizontale rouge dénote un niveau de  
 confiance à 90%.

479

480 **Remerciements**

# Contents

481

482	<b>Affidavit</b>	<b>2</b>
483	<b>Liste de publications et participation aux conférences</b>	<b>3</b>
484	<b>Résumé</b>	<b>5</b>
485	<b>Abstract</b>	<b>6</b>
486	<b>Résumé Long</b>	<b>7</b>
487	<b>Remerciements</b>	<b>22</b>
488	<b>Contents</b>	<b>23</b>
489	<b>Introduction</b>	<b>26</b>
490	<b>1. The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour</b>	
491	<b>Violation</b>	<b>28</b>
492	1.1. Introduction to the Standard Model of particle physics . . . . .	28
493	1.1.1. Elementary particles . . . . .	28
494	1.1.2. Evolution and interactions of the fields under the Standard Model	31
495	1.2. The Standard Model limitations . . . . .	34
496	1.2.1. An incomplete theory . . . . .	34
497	1.2.2. How do we search for beyond the Standard Model physics? . . .	34
498	1.3. Lepton flavour and its violation in the Standard Model . . . . .	35
499	1.3.1. The flavour of a fermion . . . . .	35
500	1.3.2. Neutral lepton flavour oscillation . . . . .	37
501	1.3.3. Neutrino oscillations in charged lepton flavour mixing . . . . .	39
502	1.4. Lepton flavour violation beyond the Standard Model and implications	40
503	1.4.1. Little Higgs model with $T$ -parity . . . . .	41
504	1.4.2. Supersymmetry models . . . . .	41
505	1.4.3. Leptoquarks hypothesis . . . . .	44
506	1.4.4. Non-universal $Z'$ . . . . .	45
507	1.5. Experiment status in LFV searches . . . . .	46
508	<b>2. The Belle II experiment</b>	<b>49</b>
509	2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider . . . . .	49
510	2.1.1. The SuperKEKB accelerator . . . . .	50
511	2.1.2. The nano-beam scheme . . . . .	52

512	2.1.3. Particle production and beam backgrounds . . . . .	53
513	2.1.4. SuperKEKB operation . . . . .	55
514	2.2. The Belle II detector . . . . .	56
515	2.2.1. The Pixel Vertex Detector . . . . .	56
516	2.2.2. The Silicon Vertex Detector . . . . .	59
517	2.2.3. The Central Drift Chamber . . . . .	62
518	2.2.4. Particles identification system . . . . .	62
519	2.2.5. The Electromagnetic Calorimeter . . . . .	65
520	2.2.6. The $K_L^0$ and Muon Detector . . . . .	66
521	2.3. Track reconstruction . . . . .	66
522	2.4. The trigger system . . . . .	69
523	2.5. Particle Identification . . . . .	70
524	2.6. Overview of the Belle II Analysis Software . . . . .	71
525	2.7. Dataset production and nomenclature . . . . .	72
526	2.7.1. Skimming . . . . .	72
527	2.7.2. Experimental data . . . . .	72
528	2.7.3. Monte-Carlo simulated data . . . . .	73
529	<b>3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution</b>	<b>76</b>
530	3.1. Definition of Cluster Position Resolution . . . . .	76
531	3.1.1. The cluster and its position . . . . .	76
532	3.1.2. The cluster position resolution . . . . .	78
533	3.2. Datasets . . . . .	81
534	3.2.1. Data Samples and Calibrations . . . . .	81
535	3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors . . . . .	82
536	3.3.1. Evaluation of the feasibility . . . . .	84
537	3.3.2. Computation of the cluster position resolution . . . . .	86
538	3.3.3. Estimation of uncertainties in the resolution . . . . .	86
539	3.3.4. Fiducial Area Selection . . . . .	87
540	3.4. Results on the spatial resolution . . . . .	89
541	3.5. Conclusions on the spatial resolution . . . . .	91
542	<b>4. Search for <math>\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-</math> lepton flavour violating decays</b>	<b>93</b>
543	4.1. Untagged analysis strategy . . . . .	94
544	4.2. Event reconstruction . . . . .	98
545	4.2.1. Particle lists . . . . .	98
546	4.2.2. Signal reconstruction . . . . .	99
547	4.2.3. Rest-of-Event building . . . . .	99
548	4.2.4. Additional requirements . . . . .	100
549	4.2.5. Signal efficiency and background composition . . . . .	106
550	4.3. Background suppression . . . . .	106
551	4.3.1. Cut-based preselection . . . . .	106
552	4.3.2. Boosted Decision Tree classifier . . . . .	111
553	4.3.3. Background rejection results . . . . .	121



554	4.3.4. Background rejection validation . . . . .	125
555	4.3.5. Expected background yield . . . . .	130
556	4.4. Study of the systematics uncertainties . . . . .	137
557	4.4.1. Uncertainty on signal efficiency . . . . .	137
558	4.4.2. Uncertainty on the expected background yield . . . . .	141
559	4.4.3. Other sources . . . . .	142
560	4.4.4. Systematics uncertainties summary . . . . .	142
561	4.5. Branching fraction upper-limit estimation . . . . .	143
562	4.5.1. $CL_s$ method . . . . .	143
563	4.5.2. Statistical uncertainties . . . . .	143
564	4.5.3. Upper limit results . . . . .	144
565	<b>Conclusion</b>	<b>146</b>
566	<b>Appendices</b>	<b>148</b>
567	A. SVD cluster position resolution . . . . .	148
568	A.1. Assumption on the track's true residuals . . . . .	148
569	A.2. The true cluster resolution . . . . .	149
570	A.3. Definition of the cluster position resolution with overlap method	150
571	A.4. Geometrical corrections of residuals . . . . .	151
572	A.5. Overlapping method discrepancy checks . . . . .	157
573	B. L1 trigger lines definition . . . . .	160
574	C. Detailed background composition after cut-based preselections . . . . .	161
575	D. Input BDT variables importance . . . . .	162
576	E. Dalitz plots . . . . .	163
577	F. Data-MC Comparison in sidebands . . . . .	165
578	F.1. After preselections . . . . .	165
579	F.2. After applying BDT output selection . . . . .	168
580	<b>List of Figures</b>	<b>171</b>
581	<b>List of Tables</b>	<b>179</b>
582	<b>Liste des acronymes</b>	<b>183</b>
583	<b>Bibliography</b>	<b>186</b>
584	<b>Bibliography</b>	<b>186</b>

# Introduction

The [Standard Model \(SM\)](#) of particle physics is a theory developed in the 20th century to explain the fundamental constituents of nature and how they interact with each other. Over time, numerous experimental results have confirmed the accuracy of the [SM](#) predictions regarding mechanisms at the subatomic scale. Through the utilization of quantum fields in accordance with the principles of special relativity, the mathematical structure of the [SM](#) permits the description of the behaviour of fundamental particles, including leptons, quarks, gauge bosons, and hadrons through three fundamental interactions: the electromagnetism, weak, and strong interactions. However, the [SM](#) presents several limitations in explaining some observed phenomena, such as dark matter, matter-antimatter asymmetry, hierarchy problems, and many others. Therefore, new physics models are being investigated by particle physics experiments. Among them, the Belle II experiment is a second-generation experiment at a *B* meson factory, which exploits the SuperKEKB electron-positron collider and its detector at the KEK laboratory in Japan. The Belle II experiment provides the perfect environment for precision measurements.

Particles possess unique properties, including mass, electric and colour charges, spin, and other quantum properties that influence their interactions with one another. Among these properties, the three lepton numbers (electronic, muonic, tauic) are associated with the lepton flavour and represent the leptonic nature and mass family. In the [SM](#), lepton flavour is typically conserved by chance in most cases. However, neutrinos can spontaneously oscillate between the three neutrino flavours, which constitutes a violation of the lepton flavour in the neutrino sector. This phenomenon can also participate in [charged Lepton Flavour Violation \(cLFV\)](#) decays through charged currents of the weak interaction. The [SM](#) predicts rates below  $10^{-50}$ , which is far below current and future experiment sensitivity. So the observation of [cLFV](#) decays would provide indisputable evidence of "new physics" beyond the Standard Model. In particular various models of "new physics" can increase the rates of  $\tau$  [LFV](#) decays just below the current experimental sensitivity. Some [LFV](#) decay channels studied at Belle II are classified as "Golden channels" due to their physics interest or low background contamination. The  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decay, which is studied in this thesis, stands in the second type of "Golden channels". Indeed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  presents a low background contamination due to its purely leptonic final state. A new method is proposed in this document aiming a better signal retention with an untagged events reconstruction coupled thanks to a machine learning background rejection.

In Chapter 1, we will present the [SM](#) of particle physics with its [LFV](#) mechanism and theories behind the possible new physics that motivate  $\tau$  [LFV](#) searches. A presentation of the Belle II experiment and how it operates is done in Chapter 2. Chapter 3

623 presents a side project consisting of a measurement of the spatial resolution of the  
624 vertex subdetectors using the overlapping sensors. Finally, we report in Chapter 4 the  
625 search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decays based on an untagged and machine learning-based  
626 selection.

627 **1. The Standard Model and Beyond:**  
628 **Focus on the Lepton Flavour**  
629 **Violation**

630 **Sommaire**

631 1.1. Introduction to the Standard Model of particle physics . . . . . 28  
632 1.1.1. Elementary particles . . . . . 28  
633 1.1.2. Evolution and interactions of the fields under the Standard Model 31  
634 1.2. The Standard Model limitations . . . . . 34  
635 1.2.1. An incomplete theory . . . . . 34  
636 1.2.2. How do we search for beyond the Standard Model physics? . . . 34  
637 1.3. Lepton flavour and its violation in the Standard Model . . . . . 35  
638 1.3.1. The flavour of a fermion . . . . . 35  
639 1.3.2. Neutral lepton flavour oscillation . . . . . 37  
640 1.3.3. Neutrino oscillations in charged lepton flavour mixing . . . . . 39  
641 1.4. Lepton flavour violation beyond the Standard Model and implications 40  
642 1.4.1. Little Higgs model with  $T$ -parity . . . . . 41  
643 1.4.2. Supersymmetry models . . . . . 41  
644 1.4.2.1. Supersymmetric models with  $R$ -parity violation . . . . . 42  
645 1.4.2.2. Supersymmetric models with see-saw mechanism . . . . . 43  
646 1.4.3. Leptoquarks hypothesis . . . . . 44  
647 1.4.4. Non-universal  $Z'$  . . . . . 45  
648 1.5. Experiment status in LFV searches . . . . . 46

649 **1.1. Introduction to the Standard Model of particle**  
650 **physics**

651 **1.1.1. Elementary particles**

652 The [Standard Model \(SM\)](#) is a phenomenological description of the propagation and the  
653 interaction of elementary particles through three fundamental forces: electromag-

1. *The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.1.*  
*Introduction to the Standard Model of particle physics*

654 netic, weak, and strong interactions. At present, the SM provides the most precise  
655 description of the subatomic scale<sup>1</sup>.

656 In the SM, the notion of elementary particles emerges from the Quantum Field  
657 Theory (QFT) mathematical framework. Such framework is based on special relativity  
658 to describe space, using three spatial dimensions and adding time as the fourth  
659 dimension. The initial concept of the QFT involves populating the spacetime with  
660 mathematical entities called fields. A field is a quantity attached to each point of the  
661 spacetime. In QFT, fields have to follow the special relativity's symmetries linked to  
662 the geometry of our universe, e.g. symmetries of translation and rotation. Following  
663 these requirements, the fields are composed of a few kinds of mathematical objects;  
664 three of them stand apart: scalar, vector and spinor<sup>2</sup>. Moreover, the symmetries of  
665 special relativity also imply the conservation of some physics quantities, like energy,  
666 momentum, angular momentum and velocity of the centre of mass, according to the  
667 Noether's theorem.

668 When describing the scale of elementary particles, the QFT must not only adhere to  
669 the requirements of special relativity but also incorporate quantum physics. The fields  
670 experience perturbations in the QFT. Mathematical operators, known as creation and  
671 annihilation operators, are defined to increment those perturbations by an integer.  
672 These perturbations are the particles<sup>3</sup>. Additionally, the fields evolve based on a  
673 superposition of all possible states with varying probabilities of occurrence.

674 From the quantum fields, emerges the definition of elementary particles. The  
675 universe is not limited to being filled by only one field but by several in the meantime.  
676 Each field represents one elementary particle of the standard model, represented in  
677 Figure 1.1 with their properties. These coexisting fields are in self-interaction and/or  
678 interactions with others. These interacting fields are traducing the fundamental forces  
679 of physics: electromagnetic, weak and strong interactions.

680 Particles are distinguished into two families according to their spin. If the spin  
681 quantum number is a half-odd-integer, the particle is described by a spinor field and  
682 named Fermions from the Fermi-Dirac statistic they follow. On the contrary, if the spin  
683 is an integer, the particle is described by a scalar (spin 0) or vector (spin 1) field and  
684 called Boson as they follow the Bose-Einstein statistic. Fermions are the components  
685 of matter, and they are classified into two subclasses: leptons and quarks.

686 Leptons exist under three mass generations composed of one charged and one  
687 neutral leptons: electrons  $e^-$  and electronic neutrinos  $\nu_e$ , muons  $\mu^-$  and muonic  
688 neutrinos  $\nu_\mu$ , and tau  $\tau^-$  and tauc neutrinos  $\nu_\tau$ . These three doublets correspond to  
689 the three leptons flavours (electronic, muonic and tauc). The three charged leptons,  
690 electron, muon and tau, interact through electromagnetic and weak interactions,  
691 while neutral leptons, the neutrinos, interact only through weak interactions.

---

1. The description of the Standard Model is based on different works: literature [24, 25, 26, 1, 27],  
thesis [28, 29, 30], online resources [31] and lectures.

2. To these objects is defined a number, 0 for scalar, 1/2 for spinors and 1 for vectors which is called  
the spin of the particle.

3. The representation of particles as perturbations of unique fields which fill the universe allows us  
to understand why particles have the same properties everywhere and everytime.

1. The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.1.  
Introduction to the Standard Model of particle physics

692 Quarks exist in six flavours: three *up-type* up  $u$ , charm  $c$ , and top  $t$  with a charge  
693  $q = +2/3$  and three *down-type* down  $d$ , strange  $s$ , and bottom  $b$  with a charge  $q = -1/3$ .  
694 In addition to the electromagnetic and weak forces, quarks interact through the strong  
695 force described by the **Quantum ChromoDynamics (QCD)**. Quarks can only be found  
696 under bound states, the hadrons: two quarks (quarks-antiquarks) states such as  $B$   
697 ( $q\bar{b}$ ) are called mesons, and three quarks states such as proton ( $uud$ ) and neutron  
698 ( $udd$ ) are called baryons. Under the **QCD**, quarks carry a colour charge: red, green,  
699 and blue for quarks and anti-red, anti-green, and anti-blue for anti-quarks (also called  
700 sometimes magenta, yellow and cyan). Hadrons must have zero total colour charge  
701 (being white by following additive colour properties) because of a phenomenon called  
702 colour confinement. Only lighter fermions are stable and make the atoms with a  
703 nucleus made up of protons ( $u u d$ ) and neutrons ( $u d d$ ) and a cloud of electrons  
704 arranged in atomical orbits. A whole variety of atoms can be created depending on  
705 the number of protons, while the stability of the atom is ensured by the number of  
neutrons. The electrons are responsible for the organisation of atoms in molecules.

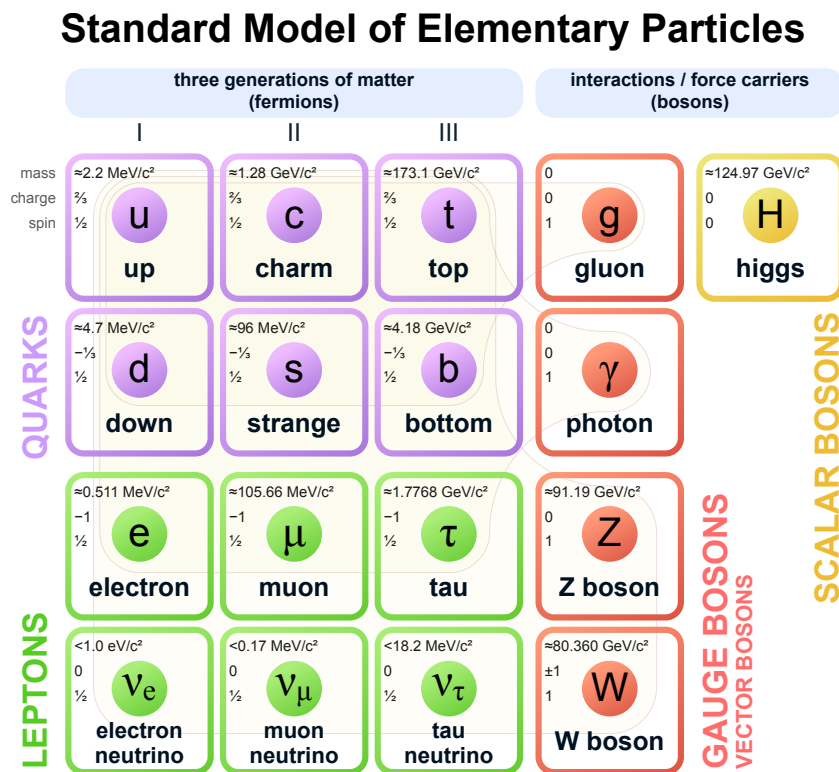


Figure 1.1. – Summary of the elementary particles featured in the Standard Model, along with their respective properties such as mass, charge, and spin. Three generations of fermions have been identified, ordered by their respective masses. The first generation is stable and comprises all of the matter that surrounds us. Credits [32]

706 In the **SM**, the three fundamental interactions are seen as an exchange of vector  
707 bosons (spin 1) between fermions:  
708

1. *The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.1.*  
*Introduction to the Standard Model of particle physics*

- 709 • Photons  $\gamma$  are massless and neutral and carry the electromagnetic interaction  
 710 between electrically charged particles,
- 711 •  $W^\pm$  and  $Z^0$  bosons are the mediators for the weak interaction between all  
 712 fermions, such as  $\beta^4$  radioactivity,
- 713 • Gluons  $g$  are massless and neutral and mediate the strong interaction. They  
 714 exist in eight colours to bind quarks into hadrons, *e.g.* protons and neutrons in  
 715 atoms. The Strong interaction is also responsible for the atomic nucleus stability.

716 Aside from this, the complex conjugate of these particles, which have opposite  
 717 complex numbers, are also part of the SM and form the anti-matter.

718 In order to finalize the SM, it is necessary to incorporate the Higgs boson, one scalar  
 719 boson which is the manifestation of the Higgs field. Despite being neutral, this massive  
 720 boson plays a crucial role in determining the mass of leptons, quarks, and  $W^\pm$  and  $Z^0$   
 721 bosons. The particle's mass increases in proportion to the strength of its interaction  
 722 with the Higgs field.

### 723 1.1.2. Evolution and interactions of the fields under the 724 Standard Model

725 In the previous section, we defined the space-time comprising the three dimensions  
 726 of space with the one time. In addition, the space-time is filled by different fields, one  
 727 per type of elementary particle. Now let's see how these different fields evolve in time  
 728 and interact with each other.

Only four fundamental forces are needed to describe all the interactions between  
 objects: gravitation, electromagnetism, weak, and strong forces. The SM is able to  
 gather three of them thanks to QFT under the gauge group product  $SU(3)_c \times SU(2)_L \times$   
 $U(1)_Y$  summarizing symmetries of the model. The colour charge  $c$ , the chirality  
 (left/right-handed) and the weak hypercharge  $Y$  arise from the corresponding indexed  
 group. Under such formalism, the lagrangian<sup>5</sup> [1] density of the SM can be written as:

$$\mathcal{L}_{SM} = \mathcal{L}_{gauge} + \mathcal{L}_{EW} + \mathcal{L}_{QCD} + \mathcal{L}_{Higgs} + \mathcal{L}_{Yukawa}. \quad (1.1)$$

The first term of the lagrangian  $\mathcal{L}_{gauge}$  describes the self-interaction of the different  
 gauge bosons with:

$$\mathcal{L}_{gauge} = -\frac{1}{4}B_{\mu\nu}B^{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{4}\mathbf{W}_{\mu\nu}^a\mathbf{W}_a^{\mu\nu} - \frac{1}{4}\mathbf{G}_{\mu\nu}\mathbf{G}^{\mu\nu}, \quad (1.2)$$

729 where  $B_{\mu\nu}$ ,  $W_{\mu\nu}^a$ ,  $G_{\mu\nu}$  are respectively the strength tensor of the gauge boson fields  $B_\mu$   
 730 under  $U(1)_Y$ ,  $W_\mu^a$  under  $SU(2)_L$ , both being the bosons associated to the ElectroWeak

---

4.  $\beta$  radioactivity is the emission of an electron (positron) and an associated neutrino (anti-neutrino) during the proton/neutron transition in the atomic nucleus.

5. The Lagrangian is a quantity which describes the dynamic of the system as a function of a set of coordinates dependant on time. This quantity is convenient because the evolution of a system can be viewed as the sum of the free evolution of each subsystem and the interaction between each of them.

1. The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.1.  
Introduction to the Standard Model of particle physics

731 (EW) interaction; and the gluons fields  $G_\mu$  under  $SU(3)_c$  associated to the strong  
732 interaction.

The spinor fields, like fermions, have two components - a left-handed  $L$  component and a right-handed  $R$  component, except for neutrinos<sup>6</sup>. In addition, neutral currents<sup>7</sup> involve both chiralities, but only left-handed fermions and right-handed antifermions interact through charged currents<sup>8</sup>. Doublets can be defined for left-handed fermions, while singlets can be defined for right-handed fermions as:

$$\ell_L = \begin{pmatrix} \nu_L \\ e_L \end{pmatrix}, \quad q_L = \begin{pmatrix} u_L \\ d_L \end{pmatrix}, \quad e_R, u_R, d_R, \quad (1.3)$$

733 where the three generation are summarized such as:  $e = (e, \mu, \tau)$  and  $\nu = (\nu_e, \nu_\mu, \nu_\tau)$   
734 for the leptons and  $u = (u, c, t)$  and  $d = (d, s, b)$  for the quarks.

The EW lagrangian  $\mathcal{L}_{EW}$  is built from the representation in left/right-handed fermions such as:

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{L}_{EW} = & \bar{\ell}_L i\gamma^\mu D_\mu \ell_L + \bar{e}_R i\gamma^\mu D_\mu e_R \\ & + \bar{q}_L i\gamma^\mu D_\mu q_L + \bar{u}_R i\gamma^\mu D_\mu u_R + \bar{d}_R i\gamma^\mu D_\mu d_R, \end{aligned} \quad (1.4)$$

with  $\gamma_\mu$  the gamma matrices used for the chiral representation and:

$$D_\mu = \partial_\mu - \frac{ig}{2} T^a W_\mu^a - \frac{ig'}{2} Y B_\mu, \quad (1.5)$$

735 where the derivative term  $\partial_\mu$  gives the fermion kinetic term.  $T^a$  is the weak isospin  
736 operator, while  $Y$  is the weak hypercharge operator, the respective coupling constant  
737 being written  $g$  and  $g'$ . Isospin and weak hypercharge are linked to the electrical  
738 charge with  $Q = T^3 + Y/2$ .

In the world of quarks, colour confinement is a crucial principle that keeps them bounded together as hadrons. This is made possible by the action of gluons and it follows specific guidelines corresponding to the quark's colour charge under the QCD theory.  $\mathcal{L}_{QCD}$  is the term associated with the strong interaction between gluons and quarks under the QCD theory and is written as:

$$\mathcal{L}_{QCD} = \bar{q}_{L,i} i\gamma^\mu D_\mu q_{L,j} + \bar{u}_R i\gamma^\mu D_\mu u_R + \bar{d}_R i\gamma^\mu D_\mu d_R, \quad (1.6)$$

with:

$$D_\mu = ig_s T_{A,ij} G_{A,\mu}, \quad (1.7)$$

---

6. Neutrinos have been experimentally proven to be entirely left-handed, whereas anti-neutrinos are right-handed.

7. In the field of particle physics, there are two currents that describe the ways in which particles can interact via the weak interaction, each mediated by a different boson. If the interaction involves a  $Z^0$  boson we are talking about the neutral current of the weak interaction. The charged current involves  $W$  bosons.

8. The weak interaction is violating the parity symmetry, which is the symmetry under the inversion of the space coordinates  $(x \ y \ z) \rightarrow (-x \ -y \ -z)$ .



1. The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.1.  
Introduction to the Standard Model of particle physics

739 where  $T_{A,ij}$  are the eight generator matrices of the  $SU(3)_c$  gauge group with  $i, j$  index-  
740 ing the three colours,  $g_s$  is the strong coupling.

At this point, the lagrangian of the SM does not contain a term to assign mass to the fields. Fields' masses are rising from the interaction with a complex field  $\phi$ , the Higgs field. The interaction of the Higgs field with gauge bosons is included in  $\mathcal{L}_{Higgs}$  term:

$$\mathcal{L}_{Higgs} = |D_\mu \phi|^2 + \mu^2 |\phi|^2 - \lambda |\phi|^4, \quad (1.8)$$

with  $\mu \in \mathbb{C}$  and  $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}^*$ . The potential  $V(|\phi|^2) = -\mu^2 |\phi|^2 + \lambda |\phi|^4$  has two local minima at  $\phi_0 = 0$  for  $\mu^2 \leq 0$  and  $\phi_0 = \sqrt{\frac{\mu^2}{2\lambda}} e^{i\theta_W} \equiv \frac{v}{\sqrt{2}} e^{i\theta_W}$  if  $\mu^2 > 0$ , where  $v$  is the vacuum expectation value of the Higgs field. In the event that the field has a non-zero value, the global  $U(1)$  symmetry is spontaneously broken [33] through the selection of a phase value for  $\theta_W = \cos^{-1} \frac{g}{\sqrt{g^2 + g'^2}}$ . Using the phase  $\theta_W$ , the gauge bosons for EW can be rotated as:

$$W_\mu^\pm = \frac{W_\mu^1 \mp W_\mu^2}{\sqrt{2}}, \quad (1.9)$$

$$\begin{pmatrix} Z_\mu \\ A_\mu \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos\theta_W & -\sin\theta_W \\ \sin\theta_W & \cos\theta_W \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} W_\mu^3 \\ B_\mu \end{pmatrix}, \quad (1.10)$$

741 and the  $\mathcal{L}_{Higgs}$  can be developed to define mass terms depending on  $v$  and the  
742 coupling constants  $g$  and  $g'$  for the EW bosons. We can identify the two charged  
743 gauge bosons fields for the weak interaction  $W_\mu^\pm$  with a mass  $\sqrt{g^2 v^2}/4$ , one neutral  
744  $Z_\mu$  with a mass  $\sqrt{(g^2 + g'^2)v^2}/4$  and finally one gauge boson for the electromagnetism  
745  $A_\mu$  which remains massless.

The interaction of the quarks and leptons with the Higgs field is described by the last part  $\mathcal{L}_{Yukawa}$ , where:

$$\mathcal{L}_{Yukawa} = y_{ij}^d \bar{q}_L^i \phi d_R^j + y_{ij}^u \bar{q}_L^i \phi^\dagger u_R^j + y_{ij}^e \bar{e}_L^i \phi e_R^j + h.c. \quad (1.11)$$

746 with the indices  $i, j$  referring to the three generations of leptons or quarks. The  
747 interaction is defined by the coupling constants  $y_{ij}^u$ . The symbol  $\phi^\dagger$  represents the  
748 conjugate of  $\phi$  in the  $SU(2)$  group, and  $h.c.$  denotes the Hermitian conjugate. The  
749 conjugate is necessary for up-type quarks but not for leptons, as neutrinos are not  
750 right-handed and do not interact with the Higgs field and are therefore assumed to be  
751 massless.

752 To summarize, the Lagrangian density for the SM is linked to the following: the  
753 development and interplay of the gauge bosons, the EW interaction between fermions  
754 utilizing the mediation of  $W^\pm$ ,  $Z^0$  and  $\gamma$  bosons, the strong interaction between quarks  
755 where they exchange gluons carrying a colour charge within the Quantum Chromody-  
756 namics (QCD) and the definition of the masses of gauge bosons and fermions through  
757 their interaction with the Higgs field.

## 758 1.2. The Standard Model limitations

### 759 1.2.1. An incomplete theory

760 The Standard Model has been rigorously tested for several decades and the discovery  
761 of the Higgs boson by the Large Hadron Colliders experiments in 2012 (which led to  
762 the Nobel Prize for François Englert and Peter Higgs in 2013) was the final missing  
763 piece of the puzzle. At present, the SM provides the most precise explanation of  
764 physics at the subatomic level. However, some theoretical issues have not been  
765 resolved and various experimental observations still require explanation. One of the  
766 most compelling theoretical topics is the inability of the SM to incorporate the fourth  
767 fundamental interaction: gravitation. The SM's QFT framework is incompatible with  
768 the mathematical description of general relativity.

769 From a phenomenological viewpoint, the existence of dark energy and dark matter,  
770 which constitute most of the universe energy content, is unanticipated by the SM.  
771 Dark matter is perhaps the most well-known example of the SM's shortcomings. Addi-  
772 tionally, the fact that the universe is made up of matter, while matter and antimatter  
773 were expected to be created in equal quantities in the early universe, cannot be ex-  
774 plained by the Charged Parity (CP) violation in the weak interaction. The origin of  
775 three generations in the fermion sector and the difference in masses between charged  
776 leptons and neutrinos are other facts that are not properly explained and demonstrate  
777 the SM's incomplete nature.

778 The weaknesses of the SM have prompted physicists to explore evidence of New  
779 Physics (NP) beyond the standard model, which would include new particles and  
780 interactions that could address the aforementioned problems and others.

### 781 1.2.2. How do we search for beyond the Standard Model 782 physics?

783 In experimental high-energy physics, the search for new physics beyond the SM  
784 follows two main strategies: the most direct one is to achieve the highest collision  
785 energy to produce new heavier particles directly; this is known as the *energy frontier*,  
786 Figure 1.2-left. This strategy is adopted by the experiments done at the CERN with the  
787 Large Hadron Collider, such as the ATLAS and CMS experiments, which recorded the  
788 highest collision energy in the world at 13 TeV.

789 The second way, indirect, consists of performing precision measurements at lower  
790 energies to measure deviations from the SM, a sign of new physics, Figure 1.2-right;  
791 the method is called *intensity frontier*. The *B* factories, like KEKB and PEP-II, or the  
792 new generation SuperKEKB as well as LHCb, adopt this method.

793 **1.3. Lepton flavour and its violation in the Standard**  
794 **Model**

795 **1.3.1. The flavour of a fermion**

796 In the SM, some accidental symmetries can arise, which are reflected in mathemati-  
797 cal description by the conservation of additional quantum numbers.

In the quarks sector, there are six distinct flavours: up, down, charm, strange, top, and bottom. One flavour for each existing quark. The unique way to change the flavour of a quark is under the weak interaction that involves  $W$  bosons mediators. Indeed, interaction with  $W$  bosons allows the transition from  $up$  to  $down$  quark types. As seen in Section 1.1.2, the Yukawa Lagrangian Equation (1.11), defines the quarks' masses through mass matrices. The mass eigenstates do not coincide with flavour eigenstates. From this postulate, a matrix  $V_{CKM}$ , called Cabibbo-Kobayashi-Maskawa (CKM) matrix [34, 35], can be built to describe the flavour transitions between quarks via weak interaction charged currents (with  $W$  bosons as mediators):

$$V_{CKM} = \begin{pmatrix} V_{ud} & V_{us} & V_{ub} \\ V_{cd} & V_{cs} & V_{cb} \\ V_{td} & V_{ts} & V_{tb} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (1.12)$$

where the elements  $V_{ud}$  is for example the amplitude of transition between  $u$  and  $d$  quarks, as shown in Figure 1.3 (left). The standard parametrisation of the CKM matrix is:

$$V_{CKM} = \begin{pmatrix} c_{12}c_{13} & s_{12}c_{13} & s_{13}e^{-i\delta} \\ -s_{12}c_{23} - c_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & c_{12}c_{23} - s_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & s_{23}c_{13} \\ s_{12}s_{23} - c_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & -c_{12}s_{23} - s_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & c_{23}c_{13} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (1.13)$$

where  $c_{ij} = \cos\theta_{ij}$  and  $s_{ij} = \sin\theta_{ij}$  for  $i < j = 1, 2, 3$ ,  $\theta_{ij}$  are the rotation angles between the mass generation (up/down, charm/strange and top/bottom) and  $\delta$  a complex phase. The complex phase was introduced when the third generation (top/bottom) was discovered and is the unique source for CP symmetry violation in the SM. From the experimental measurements of the elements [13], we know that

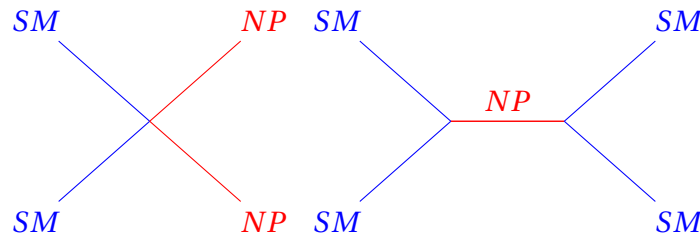


Figure 1.2. – Schemes of the strategies to search for new physics beyond the standard model.

1. The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.3.  
Lepton flavour and its violation in the Standard Model

diagonal elements dominate the matrix:

$$V_{CKM} \approx \begin{pmatrix} 0.974 & 0.224 & 0.004 \\ 0.221 & 0.975 & 0.041 \\ 0.009 & 0.042 & 1.014 \end{pmatrix}. \quad (1.14)$$

798 Transitions among quarks from the same generation are far more likely than transi-  
799 tions among quarks from different generations.

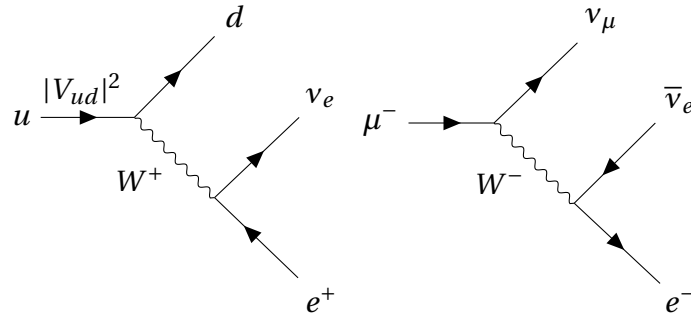


Figure 1.3. – Feynman diagram the for  $u$  to  $d$  transition (left) in the weak interaction charged currents, responsible for the  $\beta$  radioactive decay in atoms' nuclei.  $\mu^-$  decays to  $e^-$  with the emission of neutrinos through the weak interaction (right).

800 In the context of the lepton sector, the Standard Model maintains a global quantum  
801 number known as the lepton number ( $L$ ), calculated by subtracting the number of  
802 antileptons from the number of leptons. Along with the lepton number, the Standard  
803 Model also preserves three lepton flavour numbers. Indeed the leptons are gathered  
804 into three flavour doublets composed of one charged (electron  $e^-$ , muon  $\mu^-$  and tau  
805  $\tau^-$  leptons) and one neutral lepton (neutrino electronic  $\nu_e$ , muonic  $\nu_\mu$ , tauc  $\nu_\tau$ ). The  
806 three lepton flavour numbers are:

- 807 • The electron number  $L_e$ ,
- 808 • The muon number  $L_\mu$ ,
- 809 • The tau number  $L_\tau$ ,

810 where, for example,  $L_e$  is equal to 1 for  $e^-$  and  $\nu_e$ , -1 for  $e^+$  and  $\bar{\nu}_e$  and 0 otherwise.  
811 The lepton number  $L$  and the lepton flavour numbers  $L_{e,\mu,\tau}$  have to be the same  
812 between the initial and the final states of a SM interaction. Unless the lepton flavour  
813 numbers are not conserved in which case we talk of **Lepton Flavour Violation (LFV)**,  
814 Figure 1.4. The weak interaction involving  $W$  boson allows the transition between  
815 Leptons, Figure 1.3 (right), but only in the same flavour doublets ( $e^- \leftrightarrow \nu_e$ ), inducing  
816 the conservation of the lepton flavours.

### 817 1.3.2. Neutral lepton flavour oscillation

818 In the SM, quarks and charged leptons acquire a mass from the Yukawa coupling  
819 with the Higgs fields by spontaneous symmetry breaking. The neutrinos' masses are  
820 not defined since the Yukawa coupling is not applicable to neutrinos in the absence of  
821 right-handed neutrinos. Nevertheless, if the SM does not define the mass of neutrinos,  
822 it allows neutrinos to get masses below 1 eV.

823 Bruno Pontecorvo has proposed that under the assumption that neutrinos have  
824 mass, the weak interaction (flavours) eigenstates ( $\nu_e, \nu_\mu, \nu_\tau$ ) do not coincide with mass  
825 eigenstates ( $\nu_1, \nu_2, \nu_3$ ) analogously to the quarks sector. This property implies that  
826 the neutrino can oscillate: one neutrino's flavour can spontaneously change as it  
827 propagates (e.g.  $\nu_e \rightarrow \nu_\mu$ ). Several experiments have observed the neutrino oscillation  
828 from different sources. Multiple experiments using different sources of neutrinos  
829 (solar [36], atmospheric [37], accelerator [38] and reactor [39]), have established a  
830 deficit in the observed number of neutrinos. The first evidence was given by the  
831 Super-Kamiokande [37] experiment in 1998 using atmospheric neutrinos.

The rotation between the mass  $(\nu_1 \ \nu_2 \ \nu_3)^T$  and flavour  $(\nu_e \ \nu_\mu \ \nu_\tau)^T$  eigenstates is described by:

$$\begin{pmatrix} \nu_e \\ \nu_\mu \\ \nu_\tau \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} U_{e1} & U_{e2} & U_{e3} \\ U_{\mu1} & U_{\mu2} & U_{\mu3} \\ U_{\tau1} & U_{\tau2} & U_{\tau3} \end{pmatrix} \cdot \begin{pmatrix} \nu_1 \\ \nu_2 \\ \nu_3 \end{pmatrix} = U \cdot \begin{pmatrix} \nu_1 \\ \nu_2 \\ \nu_3 \end{pmatrix}, \quad (1.15)$$

where  $U$  is the Pontecorvo-Maki-Nakagawa-Sakata (PMNS) matrix [40, 41] similar to the CKM matrix. The element matrix  $U_{ei}$  represent for example the amplitude of the transition  $|\nu_e\rangle = \sum_{i=1}^3 U_{ei} |\nu_i\rangle$ . The PMNS matrix can be represented using three rotation angles  $\theta_{12} \theta_{13} \theta_{23}$ , and one complex phase  $\delta$ . If the neutrinos are from

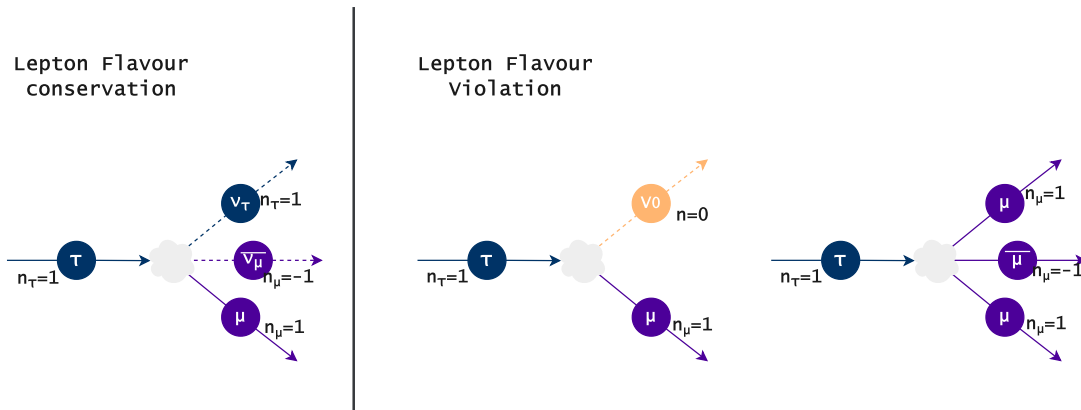


Figure 1.4. – Examples of  $\tau^-$  leptons decay with the conservation of the lepton numbers between initial and final states (left), and in the case where the lepton numbers are not conserved, called Lepton Flavour Violation (right).

1. *The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.3.*  
*Lepton flavour and its violation in the Standard Model*

Majorana<sup>9</sup> ( $\nu = \bar{\nu}$ ), two more phase  $\alpha_2, \alpha_3$  are needed:

$$U = \begin{pmatrix} c_{12}c_{13} & s_{12}c_{13} & s_{13}e^{-i\delta} \\ -s_{12}c_{23} - c_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & c_{12}c_{23} - s_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & s_{23}c_{13} \\ s_{12}s_{23} - c_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & -c_{12}s_{23} - s_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & c_{23}c_{13} \end{pmatrix} \cdot \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & e^{i\alpha_2/2} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & e^{i\alpha_3/2} \end{pmatrix}, \quad (1.16)$$

<sup>832</sup> with  $c_{ij} = \cos\theta_{ij}$  and  $s_{ij} = \sin\theta_{ij}$ .

Giving the **PMNS** matrix elements  $U_{ij}$  and neglecting the complex phases, the probability of oscillation, using three families, between a flavour state  $\nu_{i=e,\mu,\tau}$  to a different state  $\nu_j$  is:

$$P_{\nu_i \rightarrow \nu_j}(x) = \sum_{k=1}^3 U_{jk}^2 U_{ik}^2 + 2 \sum_{k>l} U_{jk} U_{ik} U_{jl} U_{il} \left( 1 + 2 \sin^2 \frac{\delta m_{kl}^2 x}{4E} \right). \quad (1.17)$$

The oscillation frequency is given by the mass difference  $\delta m_{ij}^2$ . As shown in Figure 1.5, the neutrino oscillations follow two regimes because we observed  $\delta m_{12}^2 \ll \delta m_{23}^2, \delta m_{13}^2$ . A slow oscillation dominated by  $\nu_1 \rightarrow \nu_2$  transition and a fast one.  $\nu_1 \rightarrow \nu_3$  amplitude is relatively low. Thanks to the oscillation in the two regimes, the system can be

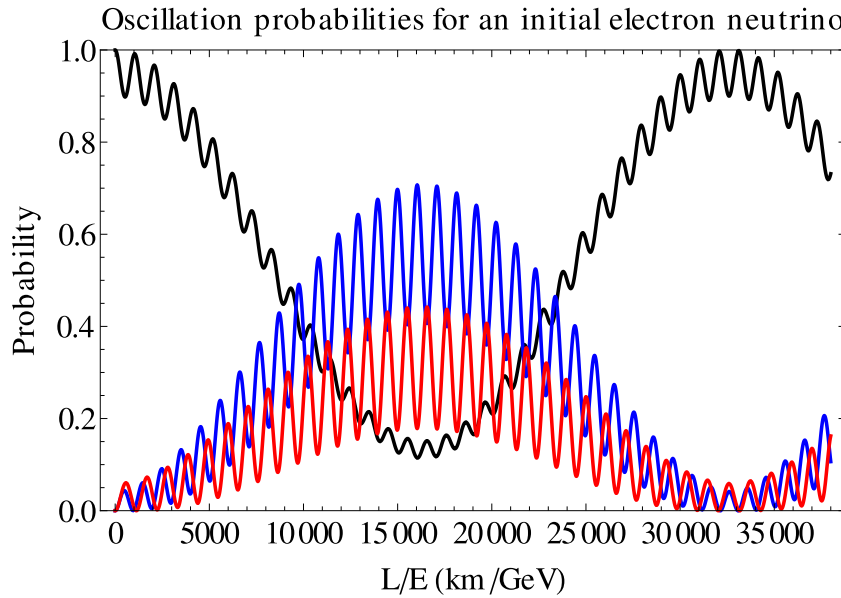


Figure 1.5. – Proportion of neutrino in the function of the distance of propagation. The black, blue and red curves are, respectively the proportion of electron neutrino, muon neutrino and tau neutrino. Credits [42]

9. **SM** particles can be of Dirac type or Majorana type, depending if they are different or equal to their anti-particle. These types lead to two different mass terms in the **SM** Lagrangian. Dirac describes masses with a single number, and Majorana describes masses by a complex matrix.

simplified to a two neutrinos oscillation, giving an oscillation length  $L$ :

$$L = \frac{4\pi E}{\delta m^2}, \quad (1.18)$$

833 which depend on the energy  $E$  of the initial state and the difference of mass  $\delta m^2$ . The  
834 oscillation length is of the order of several kilometres by GeV.

835 The discovery of neutrino oscillations demonstrates that processes involving LFV  
836 can occur within the SM through neutral currents. This discovery also suggests that  
837 at least two out of the three neutrinos have mass. Due to the lack of observation of  
838 right-handed neutrinos, it is impossible for neutrinos to interact with Higgs fields  
839 via Yukawa couplings. However, more complex mechanisms, such as the seesaw  
840 mechanism, can explain the differences in behaviour between charged and neutral  
841 lepton.

### 842 1.3.3. Neutrino oscillations in charged lepton flavour mixing

843 In the SM, heavy charged leptons can naturally decay into lighter ones through  
844 the weak interaction. However, this decay is always accompanied by the emission  
845 of a neutrino or anti-neutrino, which preserves the lepton flavour. Nonetheless, the  
846 mechanism of neutrino oscillation makes possible transitions between two charged  
847 leptons without neutrinos in initial and final states, so a mechanism for charged  
848 Lepton Flavour Violation (cLFV) in the SM exists.

849 cLFV processes, e.g.  $\mu \rightarrow e\gamma$ ,  $\tau \rightarrow \ell\gamma$ , and  $\tau \rightarrow \ell\ell\ell$  involve  $W$  boson loop or more  
850 complex processes like boxes [2, 43, 44]. In the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decay, Figure 1.6, when  
851 the  $\tau^-$  lepton decays, it produces a neutrino  $\nu_\tau$  through the charged weak current. This  
852 neutrino oscillates and reabsorbs the  $W$  boson, ultimately leading to the creation of a  
853  $\mu^-$  lepton. Throughout this process, leptons (charged or neutrinos), or  $W$  bosons may  
854 emit a photon or a  $Z^0$  boson, which can result in the production of a pair of muons.  
855 In the resulting process, the initial and final states do not present any neutrinos and  
856 the lepton flavour is violated.

The contribution of penguin diagrams in the  $\tau \rightarrow \mu$  transition has an amplitude  $A_{\tau\mu}$   
proportional to the PMNS matrix elements  $U_{\tau i}$  and  $U_{\mu i}^*$ . The amplitude also depends  
on the ratio between the neutrino mass  $m_{\nu_i}^2$  and the  $W$  boson mass  $m_W^2$  such as:

$$A_{\tau\mu} \propto \sum_{i=1}^3 U_{\tau i} U_{\mu i}^* \left( 1 + f \frac{m_{\nu_i}^2}{m_W^2} \right), \quad (1.19)$$

857 with a factor  $f$ . So, the cLFV processes are highly suppressed since the neutrinos  
858 masses are small with respect to the  $W$  one. Using the current knowledge on the  
859 PMNS matrix elements, the branching fraction  $\mathcal{B}^{10}$  for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^- \ell^+ \ell^-$  and other  
860 cLFV processes is of the order of  $10^{-55}$  [2, 3]. The contributions from the penguin

---

10. The branching fraction can be viewed as the probability to decays into a given final state.

861 diagram dominate the branching fraction, while box diagram contributions are of the  
 862 order of  $10^{-57}$ .

863 The inclusion of the neutrino oscillation mechanism in the SM allows for the cLFV.  
 864 However, due to the very low branching fraction for these decays, as explained above,  
 865 it is unattainable for current and future experiments to observe them. Thus, the  
 866 observation of cLFV decays can only be attributed to unknown Beyond Standard  
 867 Model (BSM) processes.

## 868 1.4. Lepton flavour violation beyond the Standard 869 Model and implications

870 The concept of cLFV emerged from new theoretical frameworks attempting to  
 871 explain the limitations of the SM. A way to constrain the parameter space of NP  
 872 models or exclude them is by measuring the upper limit<sup>11</sup> of the branching fraction  
 873 of various LFV decays [45, 46]. When searching for a cLFV process, it is preferable to  
 874 focus on the third lepton generation rather than the lighter generations due to the  
 875 mass dependence of several NP model couplings<sup>12</sup>. Additionally, unlike the muon  
 876 and the electron, the tau lepton can decay into quarks and leptons, allowing access  
 877 to a larger number of decay modes that can be enhanced by NP models [5, 47, 48, 49,  
 878 50] and studied experimentally. The predictions of several BSM models presented in  
 879 Table 1.1, can be investigated using the current and future experiment sensitivities,  
 880 including Belle II.

11. The upper limit represents the highest likely value of the parameter. For example, an experiment that sets an upper limit on a parameter at 0.5 can invalidate a model that predicts a value for the parameter between 0.7 and 0.9.

12. Coupling refers to the interaction between two particles by one of the four fundamental forces. The intensity of the force exerted in this interaction is established by a numerical value known as the coupling constant or gauge coupling parameter.

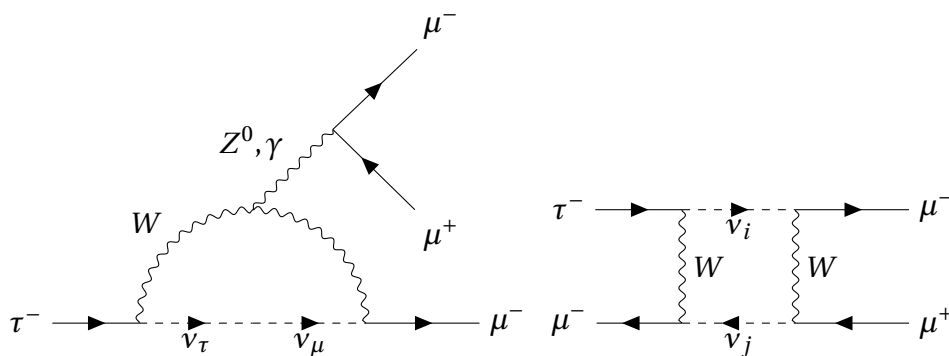


Figure 1.6. – Feynman diagrams for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decays in the presence of neutrino oscillations with  $Z^0$ -Penguin contribution (right) and box diagrams contribution (left).



### 881 1.4.1. Little Higgs model with $T$ -parity

882 The Higgs boson plays a significant role in the Standard Model by breaking the  
 883 electroweak symmetry and providing mass to the  $W$  and  $Z^0$  gauge bosons. The  
 884 observed mass of the Higgs boson, approximately 125 GeV, is of the same order as the  
 885  $W$  mass, which is necessary for weakly-coupled theories. If the Higgs boson's mass  
 886 was much larger than the  $W$  mass, the Higgs self-interactions would be too strong,  
 887 resulting in the hierarchy problem.

888 Little Higgs models [64, 65] aim to stabilize the mass of the Higgs boson by using the  
 889 spontaneous breaking of approximate global symmetries. The Higgs boson is viewed  
 890 as a pseudo-Goldstone boson, which are massive bosons responsible for symmetry  
 891 breaking. However, precision electroweak measurements indicate no evidence of new  
 892 physics up to 7 TeV instead of 1 TeV, which is known as the "little hierarchy problem."  
 893 This problem can be addressed by introducing a  $T$ -parity symmetry for new particles  
 894 at the TeV scale, where SM particles are  $T$ -even, and new particles are  $T$ -odd.

895 Within the littlest Higgs model with  $T$ -parity [51, 52, 53], new mirror leptons are  
 896 introduced ( $\ell_H \nu_H$ ) as well as heavy gauge bosons  $W_H, Z_H^0$  and  $A_H$ . These new  
 897 mirror particles introduce flavour mixing matrices related to the PMNS matrix. So LFV  
 898 is embedded by the mixing with mirror leptons. The diagrams of flavour-changing  
 899 interaction through loops of  $T$ -odd particles for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  are represented in  
 900 Figure 1.7.

### 901 1.4.2. Supersymmetry models

902 SuperSymmetry (SUSY) models are based on a hypothetical symmetry that might  
 903 exist between bosons and fermions. This concept is particularly relevant in attempts  
 904 to unify gravity with other interactions, such as supergravity and superstring theories.  
 905 According to SUSY theory, every fermion must have a boson partner, known as the  
 906 fermion's superpartner, while every boson must have a fermion partner. So SUSY is a  
 907 symmetry along the spin, superpartner having the same properties except for spin

Table 1.1. – Summary table of the upper limit on the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  branching fraction for different NP theoretical frameworks.

New Physics models	Limit BF for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$
Littlest Higgs with $T$ -parity [51, 52, 53]	$10^{-8}$
R-parity violating SUSY [54]	$10^{-8}$
Non-universal $Z'$ [55, 49]	$10^{-8}$
MSSM + seesaw [56, 57]	$10^{-9}$
SUSY SO(10) [58]	$10^{-10}$
SUSY Higgs [59]	$10^{-10}$
SM + seesaw [60, 61, 62]	$10^{-10}$
V(1) Leptoquarks [63]	$10^{-12}$

1. *The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.4. Lepton flavour violation beyond the Standard Model and implications*

908 (1/2 → 1 and 1 → 1/2). If there is an unbroken supersymmetry, then a particle and its  
 909 superpartners will have identical masses.

910 Additionally, **SUSY** provides a more successful extension for gauge coupling unifica-  
 911 tion than the **SM** and is a candidate to solve the hierarchy problem. Some versions of  
 912 **SUSY** also offer natural candidates for cold dark matter.

913 **1.4.2.1. Supersymmetric models with R-parity violation**

The **SUSY** theory introduces additional particles and interactions that have the potential to violate the baryon number and the lepton number. To prevent these violations from occurring within the framework, a discrete symmetry called R-parity is introduced [54]. R-parity varies between +1 for SM particles (R-even) and -1 for SUSY particles (R-odd). It is defined as follows:

$$R = 3B + L + 2S \quad (1.20)$$

914 Here,  $B$  represents the baryon number,  $L$  the lepton number, and  $S$  the spin. The  
 915 conservation of R-parity ensures the stability of the lightest supersymmetric particle  
 916 in the model, but in some cases, the R-parity can be violated.

In the absence of R-parity, the **MSSM** features supplementary Yukawa interactions between charged leptons ( $\ell^-$ ) and sneutrinos ( $\tilde{\nu}$ ). These interactions may not be diagonalized when the Higgs-lepton Yukawa interactions are diagonalized, which

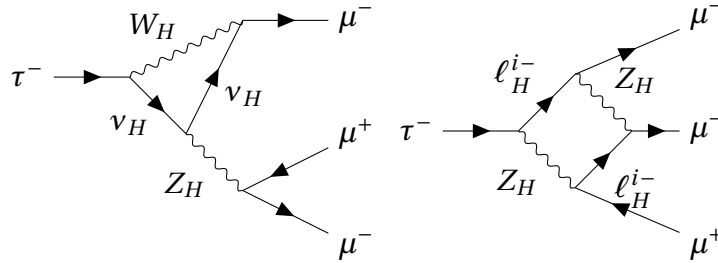


Figure 1.7. – Example Feynman diagrams leading to  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  in the Littlest Higgs model with T-parity.

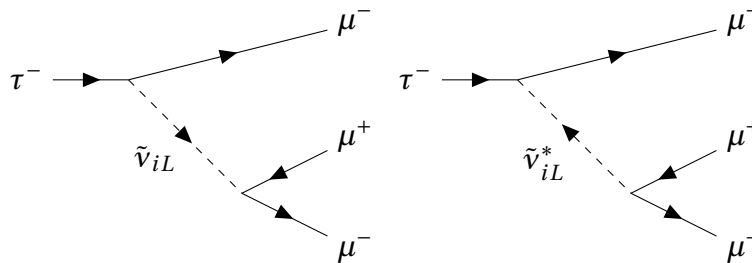


Figure 1.8. – Feynman diagrams of  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  in the **Minimal Supersymmetric Standard Model (MSSM)** without R-parity model.

opens up the potential for tree-level scalar particle-induced cLFV, Figure 1.8. In particular, the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  mode follows the effective Lagrangian:

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{eff}} = \sum_i \left( \frac{1}{m_{\tilde{\nu}_{iL}}^2} \lambda_{i32} \lambda_{i22}^* \left( \bar{\mu} \frac{1+\gamma_5}{2} \mu \right) \left( \bar{\tau} \frac{1-\gamma_5}{2} \tau \right) + \frac{1}{m_{\tilde{\nu}_{iL}}^2} \lambda_{i22} \lambda_{i23}^* \left( \bar{\mu} \frac{1-\gamma_5}{2} \mu \right) \left( \bar{\mu} \frac{1+\gamma_5}{2} \tau \right) \right) \quad (1.21)$$

917 with the coupling constant  $\lambda$ ,  $m_{\tilde{\nu}_{iL}}$  the mass of the mediator sneutrino between lepton  
918 tau  $\tau$  and muons  $\mu$ .

919 **1.4.2.2. Supersymmetric models with see-saw mechanism**

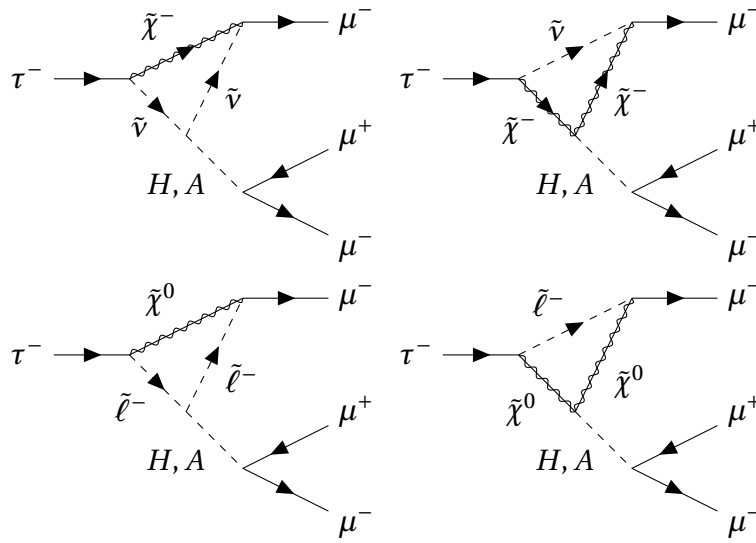


Figure 1.9. – Feynman diagrams of  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  in the MSSM + seesaw mechanism model.

920 In the SM, the fermions arise from the Yukawa couplings with the Higgs fields. The  
921 Yukawa couplings fail to explain the difference between neutrinos and charged leptons  
922 masses. The "seesaw mechanism" offers a response to that problem by introducing  
923 right-handed sterile neutrinos  $\tilde{\chi}$  in order to couple with left-handed neutrinos through  
924  $SU(2) \times U(1)$ -violating Dirac mass terms,  $m_D$ , while also receiving large,  $SU(2) \times$   
925  $U(1)$ -invariant Majorana masses,  $M_R$ . So the seesaw mechanism defines two types  
926 of neutrinos according to their mass: light neutrinos  $\nu$  primarily left-handed with  
927 an extremely small mass  $m_D^2/M_R$  and heavy neutrinos primarily right-handed with  
928 masses  $M_R \sim 1$  TeV. As particle physics experiments did not observe such heavy  
929 neutrino, it is expected to be sterile, meaning that it doesn't interact through the  
930 electroweak interaction.

In Chapter 1, Section 1.3.3, we learned that massive neutrino oscillations lead to LFV. However, in the SM, flavour violation in charged lepton processes, particularly  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ , is suppressed by factors  $m_{\tilde{\nu}_i}^2/m_W^2$  simplified as  $1/M_R^2$  with the seesaw

1. *The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.4.*  
*Lepton flavour violation beyond the Standard Model and implications*

mechanism because  $m_{\nu_i} \approx m_D^2/M_R$  and  $m_D$  and  $m_W$  are of the same order. In the MSSM with seesaw mechanism [56, 57], LFV can be directly communicated by heavy right-handed neutrinos  $\tilde{\chi}$ , sleptons  $\tilde{\ell}$  and  $\tilde{\nu}$  and additional Higgs particles ( $H$  and  $A$ ) introduced in the MSSM, Figure 1.9. In this case, LFV is suppressed by factors of  $1/M_{SUSY}^2$  instead of  $1/M_R^2$ , where  $M_{SUSY}^2 \ll M_R^2$ . The effective lagrangian for such LFV interaction follows:

$$-\mathcal{L} \simeq (2G_F^2)^{1/4} \frac{m_\tau \kappa_{32}}{\cos^2 \beta} \bar{\tau}_R \mu_L (\cos(\beta - \alpha) h^0 - \sin(\beta - \alpha) H - iA) + h.c. \quad (1.22)$$

where  $G_F$  is the Fermi coupling constant given by  $G_F = g^2/(4\sqrt{2}m_W^2)$ ,  $\kappa$  is a mass mixing parameter, and  $\beta$  is defined as the ratio between the vacuum expectation values of two Higgs particles ( $v_H/v_A$ ). It gives an expected branching fraction:

$$\mathcal{B}(\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-) \simeq (1 \times 10^{-7}) \times \left(\frac{\tan \beta}{60}\right)^6 \times \left(\frac{100\text{GeV}}{m_A}\right)^4, \quad (1.23)$$

931 where  $m_A$  represents the mass of a new Higgs field introduced by the MSSM.

### 932 1.4.3. Leptoquarks hypothesis

Over the years, one of the most appealing results from experiments such as BaBar, Belle, and LHCb are the Lepton Flavour Universality (LFU) tests. LFU assumes that the interactions between electroweak gauge bosons and leptons do not vary based on their flavour. To test this theory, these experiments have studied semileptonic  $B$  meson decays by analyzing the ratio of their branching fractions and comparing them to the predictions of the Standard Model. Two observables  $R_{K^{(*)}}$  and  $R_{D^{(*)}}$  are defined as:

$$R_{K^{(*)}} = \frac{\mathcal{B}(B \rightarrow K^{(*)} \mu^+ \mu^-)}{\mathcal{B}(B \rightarrow K^{(*)} e^+ e^-)}, \quad R_{D^{(*)}} = \frac{\mathcal{B}(B \rightarrow D^{(*)} \tau \bar{\nu}_\tau)}{\mathcal{B}(B \rightarrow D^{(*)} \ell \bar{\nu}_\ell)}, \quad (1.24)$$

933 where  $\ell = e, \mu$ .

934 The two observables' measurements suggest that the LFU test presents anomalies  
 935 with respect to the SM. One solution to this issue is introducing leptoquarks [49],  
 936 which are hypothetical particles interacting with quarks and leptons. Leptoquarks  
 937 are bosons belonging to the colour-triplet (*red, green, blue*) group; they carry both  
 938 baryon  $B$  and lepton numbers  $L$  joined together in a fermion number  $F = 3B + L$ . They  
 939 introduce unknown interactions between both types of fermions, converting quarks  
 940 into leptons and vice versa.

Even if the golden channel in  $\tau$  decays is  $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^- \phi$  with potential branching fraction just below the current experimental limit, the vector leptoquarks  $V_1$  can contribute to three-body LFV decays as  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ . Indeed, vector leptoquarks  $V_1$  can induce  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  at the loop level through photon penguins,  $Z^0$  penguins and box

1. The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.4.  
Lepton flavour violation beyond the Standard Model and implications

diagrams [63]. The effective Lagrangian relevant for these decays can be expressed as:

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{B}(\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-) = & 2(|g_3|^2 + |g_4|^2) + |g_5|^2 + |g_6|^2 + \\ & + 8e \operatorname{Re} [C_R^{\mu e} (2g_4^* + g_6^*) + C_L^{\mu e} (2g_3^* + g_5^*)] + \\ & + \frac{32e^2}{m_\mu^2} \left\{ \ln \frac{m_\mu^2}{m_e^2} - \frac{11}{4} \right\} (|C_R^{\mu e}|^2 + |C_L^{\mu e}|^2); \end{aligned} \quad (1.25)$$

941 where the photon penguins, Z penguins, and box diagrams contribute to  $g_3, g_4, g_5$   
942 and  $g_6$  coefficients. Depending on the mass of the vector leptoquark candidate, the  
branching fraction is up to  $10^{-10}$  as shown in Figure 1.10.

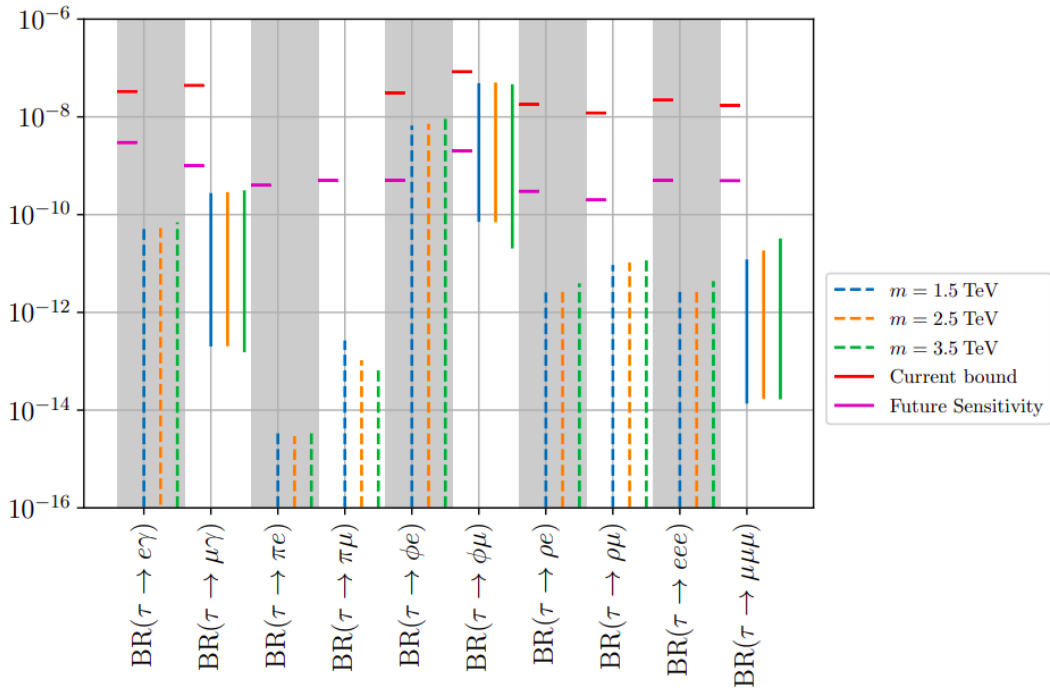


Figure 1.10. – Current and expected upper limits (red and purple horizontal lines) on the branching fractions of lepton flavour violating  $\tau$  decay modes studied at the Belle II experiment, and predicted ranges at 90% Confidence Level (CL) in the vector leptoquark hypothesis for input masses  $m_U = 1.5, 2.5, 3.5 \text{ TeV}/c^2$  (blue, yellow and green solid or dashed lines), Credits [63].

943

#### 944 1.4.4. Non-universal $Z'$

The extension of the electroweak interaction in the SM by extra gauge bosons  $Z'$  and  $W'$  is introduced in several models. The vector boson  $Z'$  model can contribute to  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  LFV decays [55, 49], as shown in Figure 1.11 by introducing four-leptons

operators at the tree level. The branching fraction for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decays in the  $Z'$  models can be written as:

$$\mathcal{B}(\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-) = X \frac{(g_{\ell V}^{33})^4}{16m_V^4} \frac{m_\tau^5 \tau_\tau}{192\pi^3} \sin^6 \theta_L \cos^2 \theta_L, \quad (1.26)$$

945 where  $X$  is a suppression factor due to the non-zero muon mass,  $\tau_\tau$  is the  $\tau^-$  lifetime,  
946  $m_\tau$  the  $\tau^-$  mass,  $m_V$  the mass of the vector boson candidate, and  $\theta_L$  is a parameter  
947 arising from the lepton mass basis transformation. Following the current constraints  
948 on  $\theta_L$  parameter, the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  LFV decay is predicted at a branching fraction  
949 of  $10^{-8}$ . The prediction from vector boson models is already at the experimental  
950 sensitivity. The improvements on **Upper-Limit (UL)** of  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  will constrain  $\theta_L$ .

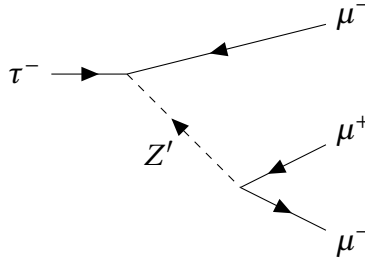


Figure 1.11. – Feynman diagrams leading to  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  in the models introducing  $Z'$  bosons.

951

## 952 1.5. Experiment status in LFV searches

953 During the last forty years, tau LFV decays searches have been ongoing in multiple  
954 particle physics experiments from CLEO, to the  $B$ -factories, Belle and  $BABAR$ , and the  
955 LHC. No evidence of these decays has been found in any of the searches conducted,  
956 but the upper limit on the branching fractions has been improved up to  $\sim 10^{-8}$  [8]  
957 for the current most stringent experiments.

958 The best upper limit on  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  was obtained by Belle at the level of  $2.1 \times 10^{-8}$   
959 at 90% CL with  $782 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ , while  $BABAR$  [7] put a limit at  $3.3 \times 10^{-8}$  with  $468 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  [8]. This  
960 mode was also searched for by LHCb [9] ( $3 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ ), ATLAS ( $20.3 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ ) and CMS [11, 66]  
961 ( $33.2 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ ), which obtained upper limits of 4.6, 38 and  $8.0 \times 10^{-8}$  at 90% CL, respec-  
962 tively [10]. Recently, CMS provided an update adding 2017 and 2018 data for a total of  
963  $131 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  [66], reaching a limit of  $2.9 \times 10^{-8}$  at 90% CL.

964 The other  $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^- \ell^+ \ell^-$  modes are more difficult to study in hadronic environment.  
965 Only B-factories have examined final states that involve electrons. An experimental  
966 summary for the search of  $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^- \ell^+ \ell^-$  LFV decays can be found in Table 1.2.

967 The current experimental bounds at  $10^{-8}$  are close to the theoretical branching  
968 fraction given by BSM models (see Section 1.4). Despite the long ongoing work on

969 tau LFV searches, this remains an important topic as we are at the sensitivity edge to  
970 probe NP.

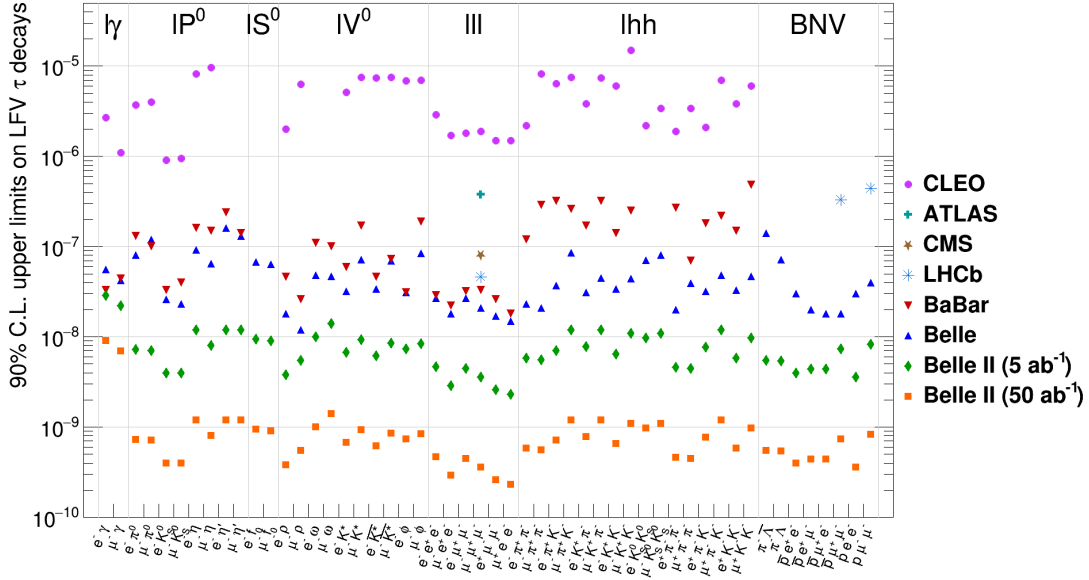


Figure 1.12. – Upper limits on branching fractions at 90% CL for  $\tau^-$  LFV decays:  $\tau \rightarrow \ell\gamma$ ,  $\tau \rightarrow \ell P^0/S^0/V^0$  (neutral pseudoscalar, scalar or vector mesons),  $\tau \rightarrow \ell\ell\ell$ ,  $\tau \rightarrow \ell hh$  (two hadrons) with  $\ell = e, \mu$ . The green and orange marks correspond to expected upper limits at Belle II for integrated luminosities of  $5 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  and  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ , the other to current limits from CLEO, ATLAS, CMS, LHCb, BABAR and Belle. Credits [67]

971 At the head of the incoming  $\tau$  LFV search stand LHC experiments mainly with  
972 LHCb and CMS and Belle II. In particular, the Belle II experiment aims to improve the  
973 upper limit by one to two orders of magnitude with respectively  $5 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  and  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$   
974 for a wide range of decays, Figure 1.12. For the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  channel, the future

Table 1.2. – Observed upper limits at 90% C.L. on  $\tau \rightarrow \ell\ell\ell$  branching fractions obtained by BABAR [7], Belle [8] and the LHC experiments. Values are given multiplied by  $10^8$ .

Mode	Belle	Babar	LHCb	ATLAS	CMS
$\mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$	2.1	3.3	4.6	3.8	2.9
$e^- e^+ e^-$	2.7	2.9	-	-	-
$e^- \mu^+ \mu^-$	2.7	3.2	-	-	-
$e^- e^+ \mu^-$	1.8	2.2	-	-	-
$e^+ \mu^- \mu^-$	1.7	2.6	-	-	-
$\mu^+ e^- e^-$	1.5	1.8	-	-	-

*1. The Standard Model and Beyond: Focus on the Lepton Flavour Violation – 1.5.  
Experiment status in LFV searches*

975 Belle II measurements will reach an upper limit on the branching fraction between  
976  $10^{-9}$  and  $10^{-10}$ . In the short future, before the next generation of colliders,  $\tau$  LFV  
977 and especially  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  experimental searches will be able to challenge the  
978 theoretical expectation from the [BSM](#) models.



## 2. The Belle II experiment

### Sommaire

981	2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider . . . . .	49
982	2.1.1. The SuperKEKB accelerator . . . . .	50
983	2.1.2. The nano-beam scheme . . . . .	52
984	2.1.3. Particle production and beam backgrounds . . . . .	53
985	2.1.4. SuperKEKB operation . . . . .	55
986	2.2. The Belle II detector . . . . .	56
987	2.2.1. The Pixel Vertex Detector . . . . .	56
988	2.2.2. The Silicon Vertex Detector . . . . .	59
989	2.2.3. The Central Drift Chamber . . . . .	62
990	2.2.4. Particles identification system . . . . .	62
991	2.2.4.1. Time-Of-Propagation counter . . . . .	62
992	2.2.4.2. Aerogel Ring-Imaging Cherenkov Detector . . . . .	63
993	2.2.5. The Electromagnetic Calorimeter . . . . .	65
994	2.2.6. The $K_L^0$ and Muon Detector . . . . .	66
995	2.3. Track reconstruction . . . . .	66
996	2.4. The trigger system . . . . .	69
997	2.5. Particle Identification . . . . .	70
998	2.6. Overview of the Belle II Analysis Software . . . . .	71
999	2.7. Dataset production and nomenclature . . . . .	72
1000	2.7.1. Skimming . . . . .	72
1001	2.7.2. Experimental data . . . . .	72
1002	2.7.3. Monte-Carlo simulated data . . . . .	73

1003 Belle II [12, 68, 69] is a particle physics collaboration working on the data collected  
1004 by the eponymous detector. It has been operating since 2019 at the SuperKEKB  
1005 electron-positron collider [70] hosted by KEK laboratory in Tsukuba, Japan. The  
1006 experiment is an upgrade of its predecessor Belle [71], which ran from 1999 to 2010, of  
1007 which it took over the physics goals.

### 2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider

1009 The electron-positron colliders operating at the  $Y(4S)$  energy, called B-factories,  
1010 were originally designed to search for [Charged Parity \(CP\)](#) violation in  $B$  meson decays,

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider

1011 meaning that the matter and antimatter do not follow the same natural laws in the  
1012  $B$  sector. This phenomenon was described, in the 1980s, by Cabibbo-Kobayashi-  
1013 Maskawa [34, 35] and the eponymous matrix allowing quark flavour mixing within the  
1014 [Standard Model \(SM\)](#). Their works were confirmed by the BaBar [72, 73] and Belle [74,  
1015 71] experiments, which led to a Nobel Prize in 2008 for Kobayashi and Maskawa.

1016 Today, the physics of  $B$  factory is complementary to the work performed by the  
1017 Large Hadron Collider. Indeed  $e^+e^-$  collisions lead to a clean environment with lower  
1018 track multiplicity and detector occupancy, resulting in an excellent laboratory for  $B$ ,  
1019  $D$  mesons and  $\tau^+$  leptons studies with a high reconstruction efficiency.

### 1020 2.1.1. The SuperKEKB accelerator

SuperKEKB performs asymmetric collisions between electron and positron beams with an energy of 7 and 4 GeV, respectively. The resulting collision energy at the centre of mass is  $\sqrt{s} = 10.58 \text{ GeV}$  and corresponds to the mass of the  $\Upsilon(4S)$  resonance, a  $b\bar{b}$  bound state. Its branching fraction to decay into  $B^+B^-$  or  $B^0\bar{B}^0$  is about 96%. The energy asymmetry of the beam leads to a Lorentz gain,  $\beta_\gamma$ , of the laboratory referential<sup>1</sup> compared to the centre-of-mass system:

$$\beta_\gamma = \frac{P_{e^-} - P_{e^+}}{\sqrt{s}} \simeq \frac{E_{e^-} - E_{e^+}}{\sqrt{4E_{e^-}E_{e^+}}} \simeq 0.28. \quad (2.1)$$

1021 Considering the Belle II boost,  $B$  mesons can fly a certain distance, in average  
1022  $\sim 130 \mu\text{m}$ , before decaying, which can be measured thanks to the excellent resolution  
1023 of the two vertex detectors. The decay length is important to separate the mixed  $B^0$   
1024 mesons as the decay time is a compelling component for [CP](#) violation studies. The  
1025 boost was reduced with respect to the one used in KEKB ( $\beta_\gamma = 0.42$ ) in order to cope  
1026 with the increase of instantaneous luminosity.

1027 Even though SuperKEKB is the upgrade of KEKB, they use the same infrastructures,  
1028 including the tunnel with a circumference of 3 km. The electrons are produced by the  
1029 interaction of a pulsed laser on a cathode in the pre-injector accelerator. The electrons  
1030 are accelerated to 7 GeV in the linear accelerator (linac) before they enter the [High  
1031 Energy Ring \(HER\)](#), Figure 2.1. The positrons are created by causing an interaction  
1032 between a portion of the electrons and a tungsten target located in the first half of  
1033 the linac. The positrons pass through a damping ring to reduce the beam emittance  
1034 needed for the desired luminosity before being injected into the [Low Energy Ring  
1035 \(LER\)](#) after reaching 4 GeV in the second half of the linac. After a final focusing along  
1036 the  $z$  axis<sup>2</sup> of the Belle II barrel by quadrupole magnets, the two beams finally collide

---

1. In the analysis, we distinguish two referential where the quantities such as momentum and energy are measured. The referential of the laboratory is the referential of an exterior spectator looking at the experiment. The second is the centre-of-mass system corresponding to the referential, where the total momentum of the two colliding electrons/positrons is zero.

2. In the laboratory system, the origin is defined at the interaction point between the  $e^+e^-$  beams. The  $z$  axis is in the direction of the electron beam, and the  $x$  and  $y$  axis are in the transverse plane of the detector.

2. The Belle II experiment – 2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider

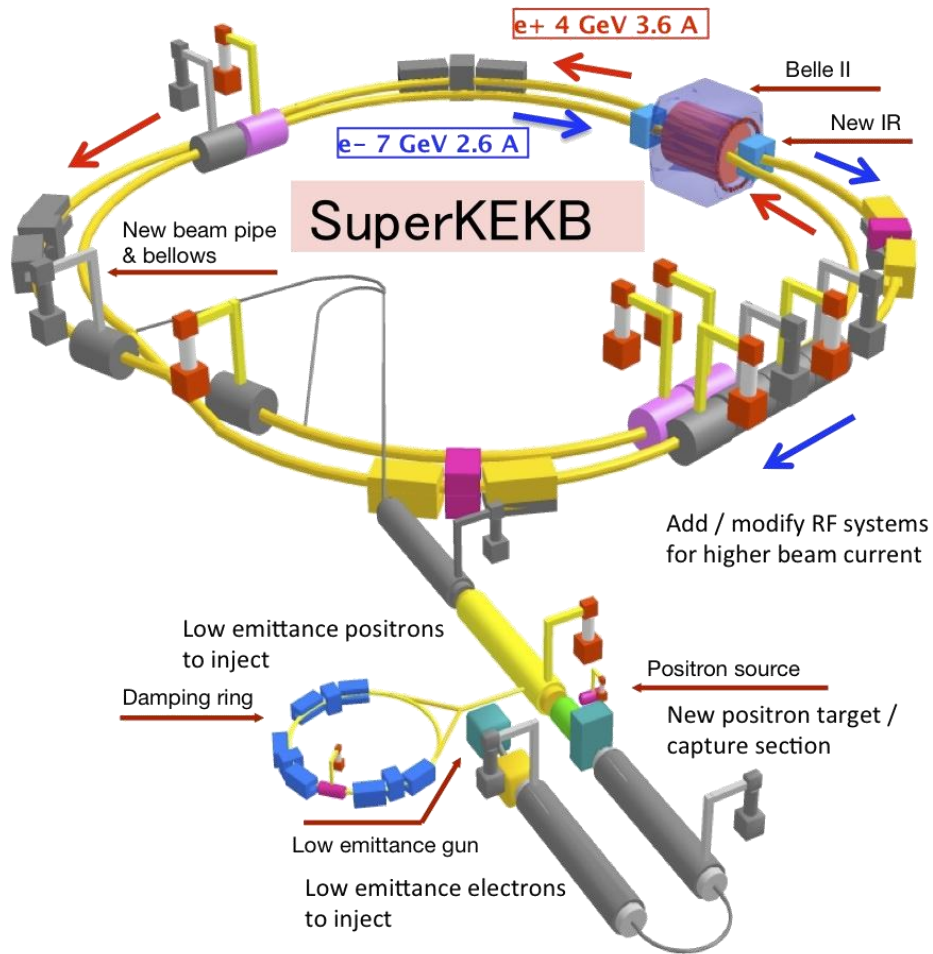


Figure 2.1. – The schematic view of the asymmetric electron-positron collider SuperKEKB systems, from the electron and positron sources to the interaction point under Belle II. Credits [12]

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider

1037 at the [Interaction Point \(IP\)](#).

### 1038 2.1.2. The nano-beam scheme

Table 2.1. – Machine parameters for KEKB in its final configuration and for SuperKEKB in June 2022 and its final design.

Parameters	Unit	KEKB	SuperKEKB	
		(HER/LER)	2022	Design
Beam Energy	GeV	8.0/3.5	7.0/4.0	7.0/4.0
Beam Current ( $I$ )	A	1.19/1.64	1.099/1.321	2.62/3.60
Beam Size at IP ( $x$ )	$\mu\text{m}$	80	16.6/17.9	11.2/10.2
Beam Size at IP ( $y$ )	$\mu\text{m}$	1	0.215	0.0618/0.0483
Beam Size at IP ( $z$ )	mm	5	-	5/6
$\xi_y$		0.090/0.129	0.0279/0.0407	0.088/0.090
$\beta_y^*$	mm	5.9/5.9	1.0/1.0	0.41/0.27
Lorentz factor ( $\beta\gamma$ )		0.43	0.28	0.28
Half-crossing angle	mrad	11	41.5	41.5
Instantaneous Luminosity	$10^{34} \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$	2.1	4.65	80

Belle II was designed to record up to  $55.5 \times 10^9 B\bar{B}$  mesons pairs, also expressed in term of  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  in integrated Luminosity  $L^3$  through:

$$N = L \times \sigma, \quad (2.2)$$

1039 with the number of produced particles  $N$ , and the  $B\bar{B}$  production cross-section  $\sigma$  of  
 1040  $1.05 \text{ nb}$  for an  $e^+e^-$  collision at  $\sqrt{s} = m(\Upsilon(4S)) = 10.58 \text{ GeV}$ . This amount of collected  
 1041 data represents fifty times the Belle dataset.

The whole Belle II  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  data collection will be provided within 2035, by reaching a maximum instantaneous luminosity  $\mathcal{L}$  of  $6 \times 10^{35} \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$  delivered by SuperKEKB:

$$\frac{dN}{dt} = \mathcal{L} \sigma. \quad (2.3)$$

The SuperKEKB machine can play on several parameters to deliver this unprecedented instantaneous luminosity described by [75]:

$$\mathcal{L} = \frac{\gamma^\pm}{2er_e} \left( 1 + \frac{\sigma_y^*}{\sigma_x^*} \right) \frac{I^\pm \xi_y R_L}{\beta_y R_{\xi_y}}, \quad (2.4)$$

where  $e$ ,  $r_e$  and  $\gamma^\pm$  are, respectively, the elementary electric charge, the electron radius, and the Lorentz factor while  $\pm$  signs distinguish the positrons + and electrons –

3. The luminosity is given in barn unit  $b$  which is equivalent to an area  $1b = 10^{-24} \text{ cm}^2$ .

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider

beam.  $R_L$  and  $R_{\xi_y}$  stand for the Luminosity and beam-beam reduction factors; those two ratios are approximated by 1. In addition, the term in parenthesis can also be considered equal to one since the ratio between the  $\sigma_y^*$  vertical and  $\sigma_x^*$  horizontal beam sizes is order  $10^{-3}$ . So, the instantaneous luminosity can be reduced to:

$$\mathcal{L} \approx \frac{I^\pm \xi_y}{\beta_y}, \quad (2.5)$$

1042 where the remaining parameters to play with for increasing the luminosity are the  
1043 beam current ( $I$ ) which is multiplied by a factor of two with respect to KEKB, the  
1044 vertical beam-beam parameter  $\xi_y$  and the beta function  $\beta_y$  at the IP.

Thus the main modification in the nano-beam scheme, proposed by SuperB [76], adopted by SuperKEKB is to minimise the beta function  $\beta_y$ , which can be seen as minimizing the longitudinal size of the beams overlap  $d$ , Figure 2.2. This is achieved

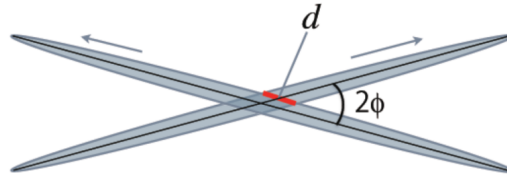


Figure 2.2. – View of the two beams colliding under the nano-beam scheme configuration: the effective beam size  $d$  and the half-crossing angle  $\phi$ .

by introducing a non-zero half-crossing angle  $\phi$  according to:

$$d \simeq \frac{\sigma_x^*}{\phi}. \quad (2.6)$$

1045 In Belle II the half-crossing angle  $\phi$  is  $\sim 41.5$  mrad, which is four times larger than Belle.  
1046 Nevertheless, the choice of the angle is related to the magnet design and the detector  
1047 background level. Indeed passing a certain point, the increase of the half-crossing  
1048 angle is deteriorating  $\xi_y$ . The list of the main upgrades with respect to KEKB machine  
1049 parameters is given in Table 2.1.

### 1050 2.1.3. Particle production and beam backgrounds

1051 If the first goal of B-factories is to study  $B$  mesons, the  $\Upsilon(4S)$  resonance is not the  
1052 dominant particle produced by  $e^+e^-$  collision at  $\sqrt{s} = 10.58$  GeV, as shown in Ta-  
1053 ble 2.2. The particle production is dominated by Bhabha scattering  $e^+ \rightarrow e^+e^- (\gamma)$  and  
1054 other low-multiplicity processes :  $\mu^+\mu^- (\gamma)$ ,  $e^+e^-e^+e^-$ ,  $e^+e^-\mu^+\mu^-$ ,  $\mu^+\mu^-\mu^+\mu^- \dots$ . The  
1055 cross-sections of the other  $b\bar{b}$  processes ( $u\bar{u}$ ,  $d\bar{d}$ ,  $s\bar{s}$  and  $c\bar{c}$ ) have the same order of  
1056 magnitude as  $\Upsilon(4S)$ , which leads to a high background contamination, called contin-  
1057 uum background. Belle II is also suitable for  $\tau$  physics since  $\tau^+\tau^-$  process, shown in  
1058 Figure 2.3, has a cross-section similar to the  $B\bar{B}$  one. Trigger systems and skim flags

2. The Belle II experiment – 2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider

Table 2.2. – Production cross section for the main physics processes of  $e^+e^-$  collisions at  $\sqrt{s} = m(\Upsilon(4S)) = 10.58\text{ GeV}$  [12].

Physics process	Cross section (nb)
$\Upsilon(4S)$	1.110
$u\bar{u} (\gamma)$	1.61
$d\bar{d} (\gamma)$	0.40
$c\bar{c} (\gamma)$	1.30
$s\bar{s} (\gamma)$	0.38
$\gamma\gamma (\gamma)$	4.99
$e^+e^- (\gamma)$	300
$\mu^+\mu^- (\gamma)$	1.148
$\tau^+\tau^- (\gamma)$	0.919
$e^+e^- e^+e^-$	39.7
$e^+e^- \mu^+\mu^-$	18.9
$e^+e^- \tau^+\tau^-$	0.018
$e^+e^- \pi^+ \pi^-$	1.895
$e^+e^- K^+K^-$	0.079
$e^+e^- p\bar{p}$	0.012
$\mu^+\mu^- \mu^+\mu^-$	$3.5 \times 10^{-4}$
$\mu^+\mu^- \tau^+\tau^-$	$1.4 \times 10^{-4}$
$\tau^+\tau^- \tau^+\tau^-$	$2.1 \times 10^{-7}$
$\pi^- \pi^+$ ISR	0.167
$\pi^- \pi^+ \pi^0$ ISR	0.024
$K^+K^-$ ISR	0.016
$K^0\bar{K}^0$ ISR	0.009

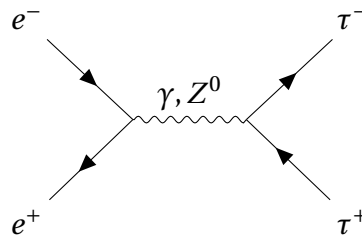


Figure 2.3. – Feynman diagram of the  $\tau$ -pair production in the electrons-positrons collider with a cross-section of 0.919 nb.

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.1. The SuperKEKB electron-positron collider

1059 are designed to select only interesting physics events and reduce, in particular, the  
1060 low multiplicity processes.

1061 In addition to these physics processes, other particles can be created by the beams.  
1062 There are five different types of background coming from the beams [12]:

- 1063 • Synchrotron radiation: When charged particles move along a curved path in an  
1064 electric field, they get accelerated and emit X-rays in the process. The intensity  
1065 of the radiation is determined by the current of the beam and the magnetic field.
- 1066 • Beam-gas scattering: When there is residual gas in the beam pipe, it can interact  
1067 and deviate with the electrons of the beam. Deviated electrons can produce  
1068 secondary particle showers that can leave tracks in the detector. The amount of  
1069 scattering that occurs is directly proportional to the square of the beam's current  
1070 and the pressure within the beam pipe.
- 1071 • Touschek scattering: When the beam is squeezed, Coulomb scattering may occur  
1072 within it, causing electrons to be deflected and interact with the pipe edges. This  
1073 type of background is more prevalent than the other two mentioned and is  
1074 estimated to be 20 times higher than in KEKB at nominal luminosity, due to the  
1075 nano-beam scheme.
- 1076 • Radiative-Bhabha process and electron-positron pair production: In most cases,  
1077 collisions do not result in the creation of a  $\Upsilon(4S)$  particle. Instead, the two beams  
1078 interact in two different ways. An electromagnetic interaction occurs between  
1079 the electrons or positrons, causing them to deviate and produce either a photon  
1080 or a low-momentum electron-positron pair. The production rate for both is  
1081 directly proportional to the luminosity, which means that it is expected to be 40  
1082 times higher than the background level at KEKB under nominal luminosity.

1083 The first three types of beam-induced backgrounds can create unwanted particles  
1084 far from the detector's centre, making it challenging to simulate accurately. During  
1085 SuperKEKB commissioning, specific measurement instrumentation (BEAST) was used  
1086 to qualify the beam background. The collaboration constantly monitors the beam-  
1087 induced background rates and performs simulations to reproduce the measured level.

### 1088 2.1.4. SuperKEKB operation

1089 SuperKEKB started its operation in 2016, and to date, it has successfully completed  
1090 the first three phases:

- 1091 • Phase 1 (2016): was dedicated to commissioning run to estimate beam-induced  
1092 background with the BEAST detector, [77]. At this stage, the final focus mag-  
1093 nets and the Belle II detectors were not yet installed, and no collisions were  
1094 performed.
- 1095 • Phase 2 (2018): was mostly used for commissioning studies with the installed  
1096 detector except for Vertex Detector. With the  $496 \text{ pb}^{-1}$  collected during this  
1097 phase, the Belle II collaboration has published its first results [78, 79].

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.2. The Belle II detector

1098 • Phase 3 (2019-2022): The first phase dedicated to physics runs with the almost  
1099 complete Belle II detector. On 15 June 2020, SuperKEKB broke the LHC instan-  
1100 taneous luminosity world record, and in 2022, it was set at  $4.7 \times 10^{34} \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ .  
1101 Phase 3 ended in summer 2022 with  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  at the  $\Upsilon(4S)$  resonance [80]. Su-  
1102 perKEKB has also scanned other collision energies, *e.g.*  $\Upsilon(4S)$  off-resonance and  
1103  $\Upsilon(5S)$ , for a total dataset of  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ .

1104 Since autumn 2022, SuperKEKB and Belle II have been in the [Long Shutdown 1 \(LS1\)](#)  
1105 phase [81, 82] to prepare the next round of data-taking planned for Winter 2023. The  
1106 detector upgrades performed during the [LS1](#) are:

- 1107 • The replacement of the beam-pipe at the interaction point,
- 1108 • The installation of the second layer of pixel sensors for the [PiXel Detector \(PXD\)](#),
- 1109 • The replacement of the photomultipliers of the central [Particle IDentification](#)  
1110 [\(PID\) detector \(Time-Of-Propagation \(TOP\)\)](#),
- 1111 • The replacement of the ageing components,
- 1112 • The upgrade of the data-acquisition system by transitioning to new cards and  
1113 monitoring.

1114 Regarding the accelerator, work was being done to improve the injection of electrons  
1115 and positrons in the collider and the final collimators and add shieldings to decrease  
1116 the backgrounds.

## 1117 2.2. The Belle II detector

1118 The Belle II detector surrounds the interaction point where electrons and positrons  
1119 collide in SuperKEKB. Belle II is  $7 \times 7.5 \text{ m}^2$  in size and weighs 1400 tons [68]. It is,  
1120 for a large part, an upgrade of the previous Belle experiment’s device, designed as  
1121 the piling of multiple layers, each component being a sub-detector with its own  
1122 functions. A simple 3D representation can be found in [Figure 2.4](#) and a more detailed  
1123 2D description in [Figure 2.5](#).

1124 The detector’s main purpose is to reconstruct both charged and neutral particles  
1125 that are produced during collisions. It aims to do so by meeting specific requirements,  
1126 including precise measurements of particle’s four-momentum and space-time coordi-  
1127 nates. It must also cover a large polar angle, have an efficient [PID](#) system, and make  
1128 accurate trigger decisions at a high frequency.

1129 The upcoming sections will detail the various components of the Belle II detector,  
1130 starting from the innermost layer and progressing outward.

### 1131 2.2.1. The Pixel Vertex Detector

1132 Due to the nano-beam design of SuperKEKB, the beampipe radius is tiny ( $\sim 10 \text{ mm}$ ).  
1133 This architecture has the advantage of allowing the [VerteX Detector \(VXD\)](#) to be close  
1134 to the [IP](#). In counterpart, the [VXD](#) has to handle an extremely high hit rate, mainly



## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.2. The Belle II detector

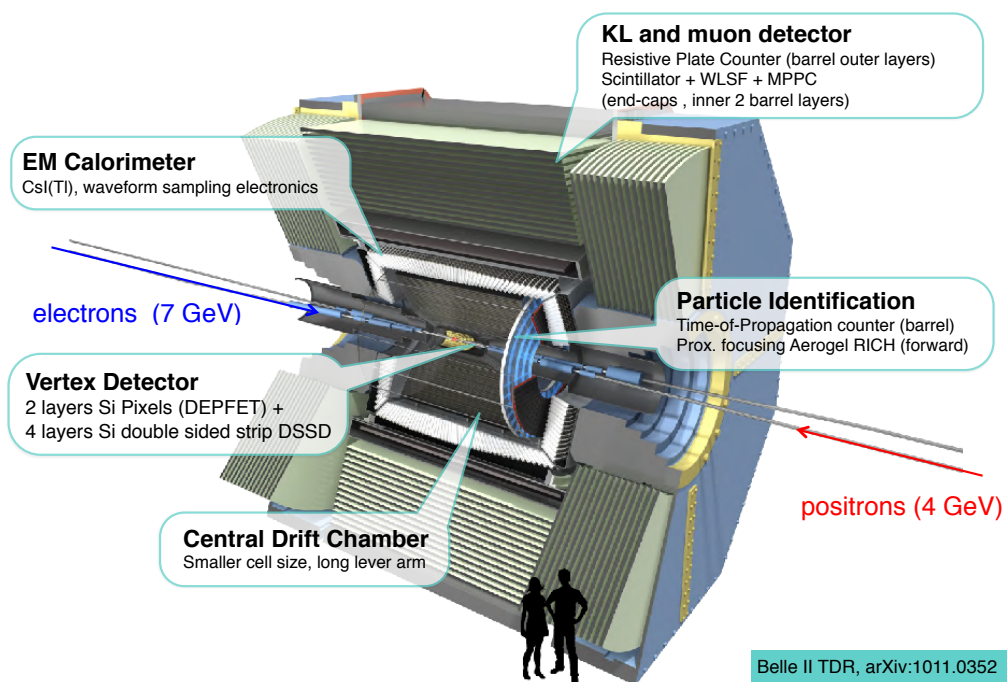


Figure 2.4. – Schematic three dimension view of the Belle II detector. Credits [12]



1135 from the beam background. Pixel detectors are used for inner **VXD** layers at small  
 1136 radii, while the outer layers rely on Silicon strips technology<sup>4</sup>.

1137 The **VXD** architecture incorporates two inner layers based on ultrathin **DEPLETED**  
 1138 **Field Effect Transistor (DEPFET)** pixels (75  $\mu\text{m}$ ), the **PXD** [83]. The readout electronics  
 1139 and their active coolings are exported beyond the acceptance region, reducing the  
 1140 material budget that leads to multiple scattering. The only part of electronics inside  
 1141 the acceptance region is the switcher cooled by skinny nitrogen pipes. The pixel itself  
 1142 is cooled by air, the power dissipation is sufficient thanks to the low consumption of  
 1143 the pixels. The design was tested to experience resistance against radiation.

1144 **DEPFET** pixels combine detection and amplification in a completely depleted sil-  
 1145 icon substrate using a p-channel MOSFET structure. An internal gate collects the  
 1146 electrons liberated by the passing charged particles. The inner gate modulates the  
 1147 current at readout time, allowing the detection of the accumulated charge. The sen-  
 1148 sors of the **PXD** design are stacked in 8 and 12 planar modules (ladders) to form two  
 1149 layers with 14 mm and 22 mm radii, respectively, shown in Figure 2.6. The sensitive  
 1150 lengths are calculated to match the polar angular acceptance range of  $17^\circ$  to  $155^\circ$ . The  
 1151 pixel sizes  $50 \times 55 - 85 \mu\text{m}^2$  verify the  $10 \mu\text{m}$  hit resolution requirements. The module  
 1152 is read in  $20 \mu\text{s}$  by reading four rows over 1600 in 100 ns simultaneously.

1153 After some issues during the assembly of the **PXD** layers, only half of the designed  
 1154 **PXD** was mounted. Early phase 3 started in March 2019 and only used a full first layer  
 1155 and two ladders in the second one. The installation has been completed during the  
 1156 first long shutdown in 2023.

## 1157 2.2.2. The Silicon Vertex Detector

1158 In the field of physics at the B factories, low-momentum particles play a crucial role.  
 1159 However, they pose a challenge for the track-finding system due to their sensitivity  
 1160 to multiple scattering. For this reason, the **Silicon Vertex Detector (SVD)** system [84],  
 1161 Figure 2.7, requires a very low material budget and a short shaping time to limit  
 1162 occupancy to just a few per cent. These characteristics are essential for the track-  
 1163 finding algorithms to reject background effectively. To achieve these goals, the sensors  
 1164 are designed in a specific geometrical shape and equipped with appropriate readout  
 1165 electronics. The use of large silicon wafers and trapezoidal slanted sensors in the  
 1166 forward region solves the issue of geometrical shape.

1167 The **SVD** is made up of 172 double-sided strip sensors, which are arranged in four  
 1168 layers, Figure 2.8, with varying radii. These radii are 39 mm (layer 3), 80 mm (layer  
 1169 4), 104 mm (layer 5), and 135 mm (layer 6) [84]. The coverage of the azimuthal  
 1170 angle ranges from  $17^\circ$  (in the forward region) to  $150^\circ$  (in the backward region). This  
 1171 asymmetry is due to the Lorentz boost in the laboratory frame, which favours events  
 1172 that are boosted in the forward direction. The strips on the sensors are arranged in  
 1173 perpendicular directions on opposite sides. The u/P side measures the  $r\phi$ -direction,

---

4. The hit rate and the beam background are proportional to the transverse distance from the beam. So after a given radius, the use of silicon strips is safe.

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.2. The Belle II detector

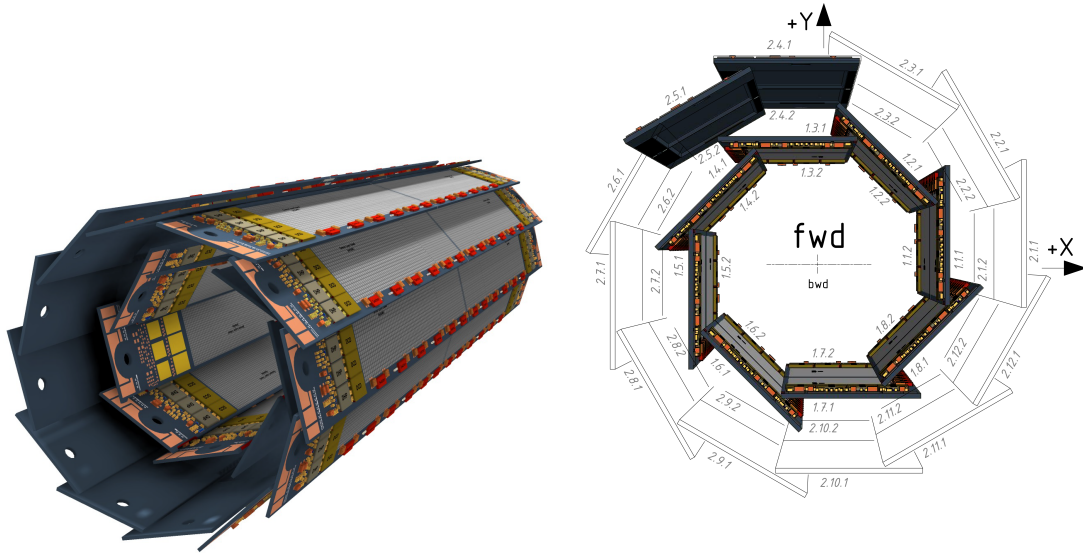


Figure 2.6. – Three-dimensional view of the two PXD layers (left). Transverse scheme of the phase 3 PXD layout with one full layer and two ladders on the second (right). Credits [12]

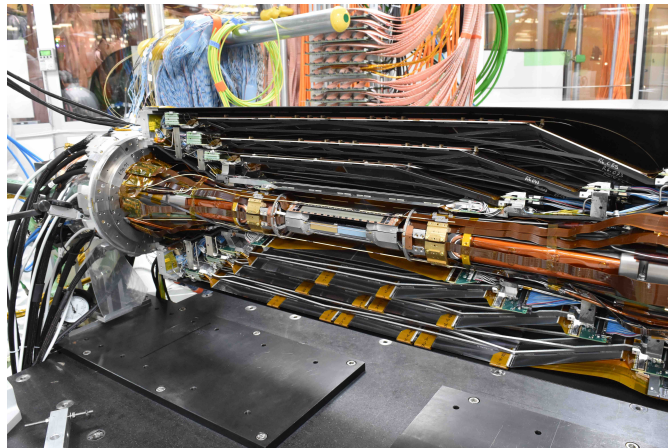


Figure 2.7. – The Belle II SVD already matched with the PXD and ready to be installed at the Interaction Point of the detector. Credits [84].

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.2. The Belle II detector

1174 while the v/N side provides information on the  $z$ -coordinate along the beam line.  
 1175 Table 2.3 provides detailed information about SVD sensors.

	Small	Large	Trap.
No. u/P readout strips	768	768	768
No. v/N readout strips	768	512	512
Readout pitch u/P strips ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	50	75	50-75
Readout pitch v/N strips ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	160	240	240
$\sigma_{\text{dig}}$ v/N strips ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	23	35	35
$\sigma_{\text{dig}}$ u/P strips ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	7	11	7-11
Sensor thickness ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	320	320	300
Active Length (mm)	122.90	122.90	122.76
Active Width (mm)	38.55	57.72	57.59-38.42

Table 2.3. – Geometrical details of the SVD double-sided strips sensors. All sensors have one intermediate floating strip between two readout strips.

1175  
 1176 The electronic system at the front-end is made up of APV25 chips providing an  
 1177 analogue readout of the collected signal. Each chip has 128 channels and a quick  
 1178 shaping time of 50 ns. It can also tolerate high radiation of up to 100 Mrad of integrated  
 1179 dose. To reconstruct the signal waveform, six consecutive analogue samplings are  
 1180 used. A mixed three/six acquisition mode is also in place to lessen dead time, data  
 1181 size, and occupancy at higher luminosity. For shorter ladders in layer 3, the chips  
 1182 are situated outside the active area, while for longer ladders in layers 4, 5, and 6,  
 1183 the chip-on-sensor, Origami, concept is utilized to reduce the signal propagation distance,  
 1184 capacitance, and noise. With this design, the chips are positioned only on one side  
 1185 of the detector for the middle sensors of the ladders, where a wrapped flex allows for  
 1186 reading out of the sensor side opposite to the chip's position. The chips are thinned to  
 1187  $100\ \mu\text{m}$  to minimize the material budget, and stainless steel pipes for bi-phase CO<sub>2</sub>  
 1188 cooling at  $-20^\circ\text{C}$  are only located on one side.

The size of the pitch  $p$ , Table 2.3, already provides a rough indication of the spatial

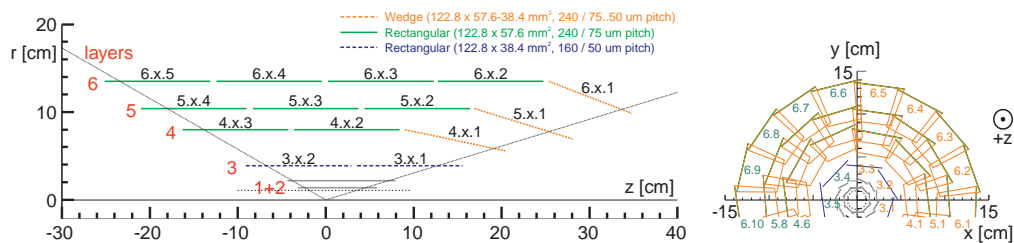


Figure 2.8. – Schematic Layout of the SVD detector. In the left schematic, the yellow sensors are the wedge, green are the large sensors and blue the small ones. Credits [84].

resolution, the digital resolution defined as:

$$\sigma_{\text{dig}} = \frac{p}{2\sqrt{12}} \quad (2.7)$$

1189 where factor 2 at the denominator is needed to take into account the presence of the  
1190 floating strip.

1191 The detector operations went smoothly and we didn't observe any major hardware  
1192 issues. All 1748 APVs were working properly for the data we used, and only about 1%  
1193 of strips were masked, mostly at the edges of the chips. As a result, we anticipate that  
1194 the detector's resolution won't be impacted by any malfunctions.

### 1195 2.2.3. The Central Drift Chamber

1196 The Belle II [Central Drift Chamber \(CDC\)](#) [85] detector endorses the same three  
1197 roles as its predecessor in Belle but aims for better performances. First, it plays a role  
1198 in charged tracks reconstruction and momentum measurement along with the [SVD](#)  
1199 and [PXD](#). Then, it provides particle identification information by characterizing the  
1200 energy loss  $dE/dx$  due to gas ionisation. Finally, it gives efficient and reliable trigger  
1201 signals.

1202 The [CDC](#) cylinder volume extends from a radius of 16 cm to 113 cm to fit with the  
1203 new [VXD](#) and [PID](#) detectors, and covers a polar angle from  $17^\circ$  to  $150^\circ$ . It is composed  
1204 of 14336 tungsten sense wires in an electrical field gradient provided by aluminium  
1205 wires. All wires are arranged into 56 layers, subdivided into nine super-layers, as shown  
1206 in [Figure 2.9](#) (left). The super-layers alternate between axial (along the  $z$ -direction)  
1207 and stereo (slanted by an angle of at most 80 mrad), as shown in [Figure 2.9](#) (right), to  
1208 provide a three-dimensional reconstruction and trigger system. The volume is made  
1209 of drift cells, from  $6 \times 10 \text{ mm}^2$  to  $18 \times 18 \text{ mm}^2$ , filled by a helium-ethane gas mixture  
1210 at 50% proportion each, already proven in Belle. The structure is supported by two  
1211 carbon cylinders and two aluminium end plates where the readout electronics are  
1212 located.

1213 The [CDC](#) spatial resolution is about 2 mm in  $z$  and  $100 \mu\text{m}$  in  $r$  direction while the  
1214 relative precision on energy loss is 12% for  $90^\circ$  incident track angle.

### 1215 2.2.4. Particles identification system

1216 The Belle II [PID](#) system is divided into two subdetectors, one for the barrel re-  
1217 gion with the [TOP](#) counter and one for the end-cap with the [Aerogel Ring-Imaging](#)  
1218 [Cherenkov \(ARICH\)](#) counter. They both use the Cherenkov effect to assess the charged  
1219 particle velocity and, thus, the likelihood of the different mass assumptions.

#### 1220 2.2.4.1. Time-Of-Propagation counter

1221 The [TOP](#) [87] consists of 16 quartz radiators placed between [CDC](#) outer cylinder and  
1222 the ECL. Two quartz bars are joined together to form a radiator of 2.5 m length, 44 cm

1223 with and 2 cm thickness. A mirror is placed on the forward end while at the back end  
 1224 is placed the [Micro-Channel Plate PhotoMultiplier Tubes \(MCP-PMTs\)](#).

A Cherenkov ring is produced by charged particles travelling through the quartz radiator. These photons reflected by the quartz bar either propagate to the front end, where the mirror returns them, or to the back end, where [MCP-PMTs](#) collects them, as shown in [Figure 2.10](#). The [MCP-PMTs](#) provides the time of propagation and the arriving two-dimensional space information  $(x, y)$ , combined together to reconstruct the Cherenkov angle  $\theta_C$ . Consequently, the particle velocity  $v$  is inferred as:

$$\cos\theta_C = \frac{c}{nv}, \quad (2.8)$$

1225 with  $c$  the speed of light in vacuum and the refractive index of the medium  $n$ . The  
 1226 likelihood for different mass hypotheses is calculated. The [TOP PID](#)'s performances  
 1227 are critically impacted by time resolution broadening due to the photon's chromaticity.  
 1228 This issue is overcome by introducing a focusing system, a concave mirror, which  
 1229 divides the ring images according to the wavelength of Cherenkov photons.

1230 The [MCP-PMTs](#) achieve an excellent time resolution for single-photon detection of  
 1231 50 ps thanks to a transit time spread of  $\sim 30$  ps and a gain of  $10^6$ .

#### 1232 2.2.4.2. Aerogel Ring-Imaging Cherenkov Detector

1233 The forward endcap particle identification is handled by the [ARICH](#) [89] counter,  
 1234 [Figure 2.11](#), composed of:

- 1235 • the Aerogel Cherenkov radiator, where Cherenkov photons are produced when a  
 1236 charged particle passes through it,
- 1237 • an expansion volume, which is a 20 cm gap between the radiator and the photon  
 1238 detector, allowing emitted Cherenkov photons to form well-defined Cherenkov

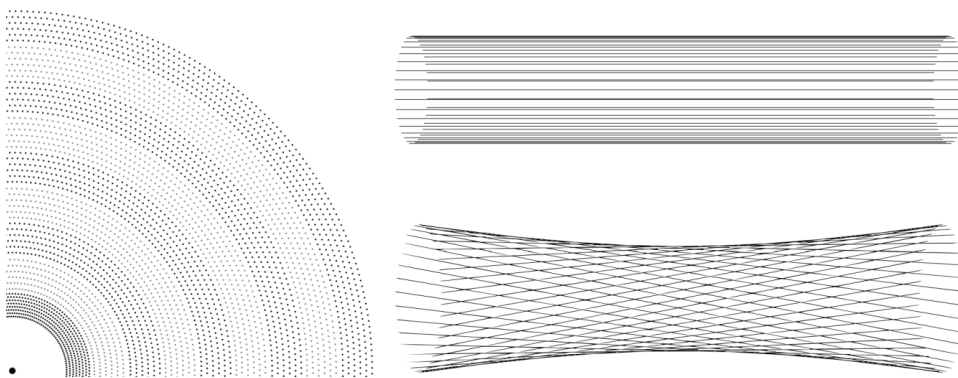


Figure 2.9. – Left: A quadrant of the drift chamber in  $r\phi$  projection. The innermost superlayer confines eight layers, and all others contain six. Right: A scheme of stereo wires (bottom) relative to axial wires (top). The skew is exaggerated. Credits [86].

2. The Belle II experiment – 2.2. The Belle II detector

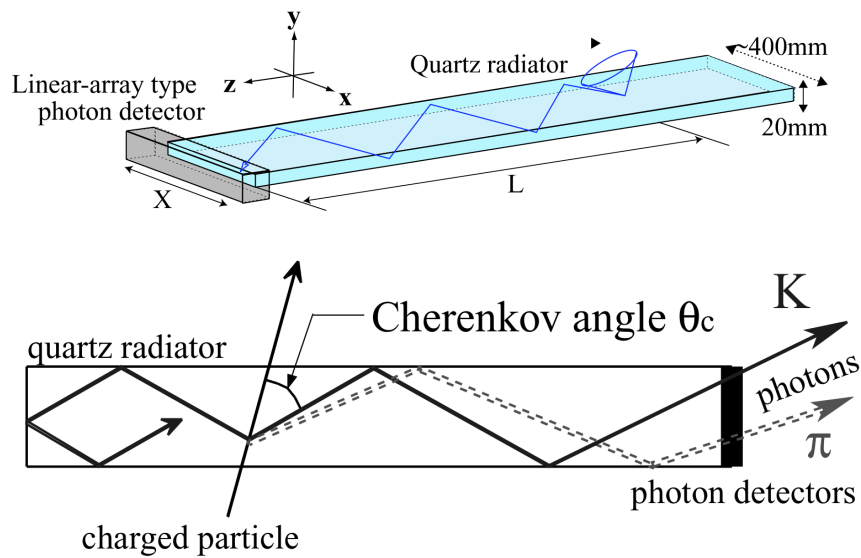


Figure 2.10. – Schematic view of a TOP counter module (top) and representation of the internal reflecting Cherenkov photons emitted by a kaon or a pion (bottom). Credits [68]

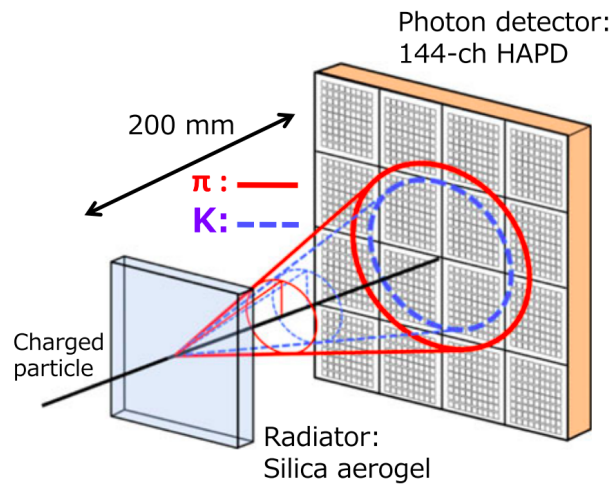


Figure 2.11. – Particle identification principle between  $\pi$  and  $K$  using the ARICH counter. The cones shown in solid and dotted lines represent the Cherenkov light emitted by a pion and a kaon, respectively. Credits [88]



- 1239 rings,
- 1240 • an array of position sensitive photons sensor, based on [Hybrid Avalanche Photo-](#)
- 1241 [Detector \(HADP\)](#) that detects single photons with high efficiency and good 2D
- 1242 resolution in a high magnetic field,
- 1243 • the Readout system for the photons detectors.

1244 The key indicator of the [ARICH](#) counter performances is the Cherenkov angle resolu-

1245 tion per charged tracks  $\sigma_{trk} = \sigma_{\theta} / \sqrt{N_{\gamma}}$ , with the number of detected photons  $N_{\gamma}$  and

1246 the single photon angle resolution  $\sigma_{\theta}$ . The radiator thickness impacts the number

1247 of Cherenkov photons emitted by charged particles, thus the resolution  $\sigma_{trk}$  by  $N_{\gamma}$ .

1248 However, the emission point uncertainty degrades the single photon resolution  $\sigma_{\theta}$ .

1249 The radiator design maximizes both parameters thanks to a focusing arrangement

1250 with two layers with refractive index  $n_1 < n_2$  for a total thickness of 4 cm. This re-

1251 duces photon spread in the detector plane and makes the Cherenkov rings overlap,

1252 increasing  $N_{\gamma}$  and reducing the emission point uncertainty, as shown in Figure 2.12.

1253 Thanks to this design, the [ARICH](#) counter achieves a resolution per track  $\sigma_{trk} =$

1254  $\sigma_{\theta} / \sqrt{N_{\gamma}} = 4.5$  mrad assuming 12.7 detected photons in average and a single photon

1255 resolution of 14.3 mrad.

## 1256 2.2.5. The Electromagnetic Calorimeter

1257 In  $B$  physics, electromagnetic calorimeters play a critical role by providing an ex-

1258 cellent energy resolution since  $B$  mesons produce a large amount of  $\pi^0$  and neutral

1259 particles. The [Electromagnetic CaLorimeter \(ECL\)](#) [90] tasks are to detect photons

1260 from a wide energy window, from 20 MeV to 4 GeV and to measure their energy and

1261 angular coordinates while contributing to particle identification of electrons and  $K_L^0$ ,

1262 together with the KLM. In addition, the [ECL](#) takes part in several trigger conditions

1263 and the measurement of the instantaneous luminosity.

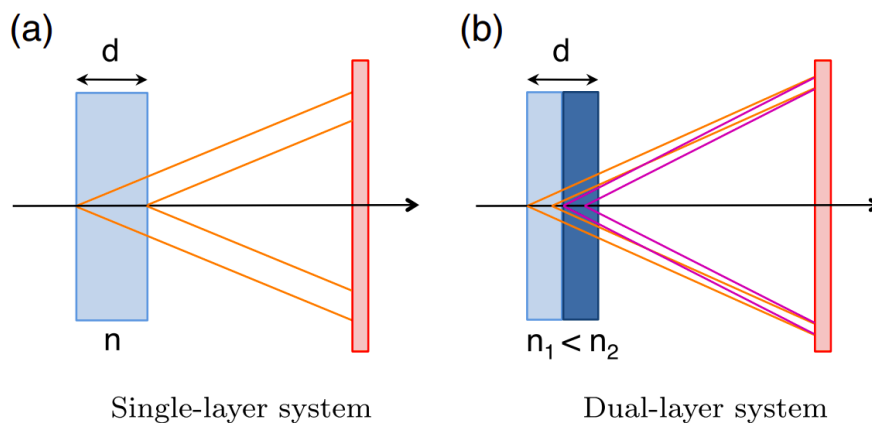


Figure 2.12. – The dual-layer focusing scheme: (a) image of a normal Cherenkov counter with a single layer; (b) focusing with dual layer, in which different refractive indices of  $n_1$  and  $n_2$  such as ( $n_1 < n_2$ ) are used. Credits [88]

1264 The choice for the Belle II calorimeter was to reuse the previous Belle device by  
 1265 upgrading the readout electronic system to cope with the high background rates.  
 1266 The [ECL](#) is made of a 3 m long and 1.25 m inner radius barrel to cover a polar angle  
 1267 acceptance from  $32.20^\circ$  to  $128.70^\circ$ , forward and backward endcaps for a full range  
 1268 from  $12.10^\circ$  to  $155.03^\circ$  with a gap  $\sim 1^\circ$  between barrel and endcaps. The structure  
 1269 contains 8736 CsI(T) crystals shaped in a truncated pyramid with an average size of  
 1270  $6 \times 6 \times 30 \text{ cm}^3$ . On the rear of each crystal are glued two  $10 \times 20 \text{ mm}^2$  photo-diodes  
 1271 to catch the scintillation light in two independent signals through their preamplifier  
 1272 summed at the later stage. This readout setup allows us to deal with the significant  
 1273 pile-up noise and a high background environment.

The intrinsic energy resolution was measured from tests on prototypes and approxi-  
 mated by:

$$\frac{\sigma_E}{E} = \sqrt{\left(\frac{0.066\%}{E}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{0.81\%}{\sqrt[4]{E}}\right)^2 + (1.34\%)^2}, \quad (2.9)$$

1274 where the energy  $E$  is measured in GeV.

## 1275 2.2.6. The $K_L^0$ and Muon Detector

1276 The outermost detector is called [KLM](#) [68]. It's dedicated to provide the [PID](#) for  
 1277 high penetration power particles like the muons and  $K_L^0$  mesons. Muons can cross the  
 1278 [KLM](#) straight on depending on their momenta and polar angles, while  $K_L^0$  interacts by  
 1279 producing hadronic showers in the [ECL](#) and/or [KLM](#).

1280 It consists of an alternating sandwich of 14 (15 in the barrel) 4.7 cm thick iron plate  
 1281 layers and 14 active detector element layers located outside the superconducting  
 1282 solenoid, which provides the 1.5T magnetic fields used to measure the particle's  
 1283 momenta. The iron plates are used as magnetic flux return for the solenoid and to  
 1284 give a 3.9 interaction length in addition to the 0.8 from [ECL](#) where the  $K_L^0$  mesons  
 1285 can shower hadronically. The octagonal [KLM](#) barrel is divided into 16 sectors to  
 1286 cover a polar angle region from  $45^\circ$  to  $125^\circ$ . This region is enlarged from  $20^\circ$  to  $155^\circ$   
 1287 by adding the two forward and backward endcaps. The outer layers of the barrel  
 1288 are still equipped with the glass-electrode resistive plate chambers used in Belle. In  
 1289 contrast, the scintillator readout in endcaps and inner layers is provided by silicon  
 1290 photo-multipliers. Resistive plates have a long dead time after a discharge which is  
 1291 unsuitable for the expected high background, the use of silicon photo-multiplier, with  
 1292 its 0.7 ns time resolution, will be generalised to the whole [KLM](#).

## 1293 2.3. Track reconstruction

1294 The process of charged particle (track) reconstruction in Belle II [91, 86], is called  
 1295 "tracking". Using reconstruction software, the spatial measurements (hits) of a travers-  
 1296 ing particle are combined into a helical trajectory (tracks) to extract the kinematic  
 1297 properties of the particle. This tracking is divided into the task of partitioning the hits  
 1298 into tracks (track finding) and calculating the track parameters (track fitting).

2. The Belle II experiment – 2.3. Track reconstruction

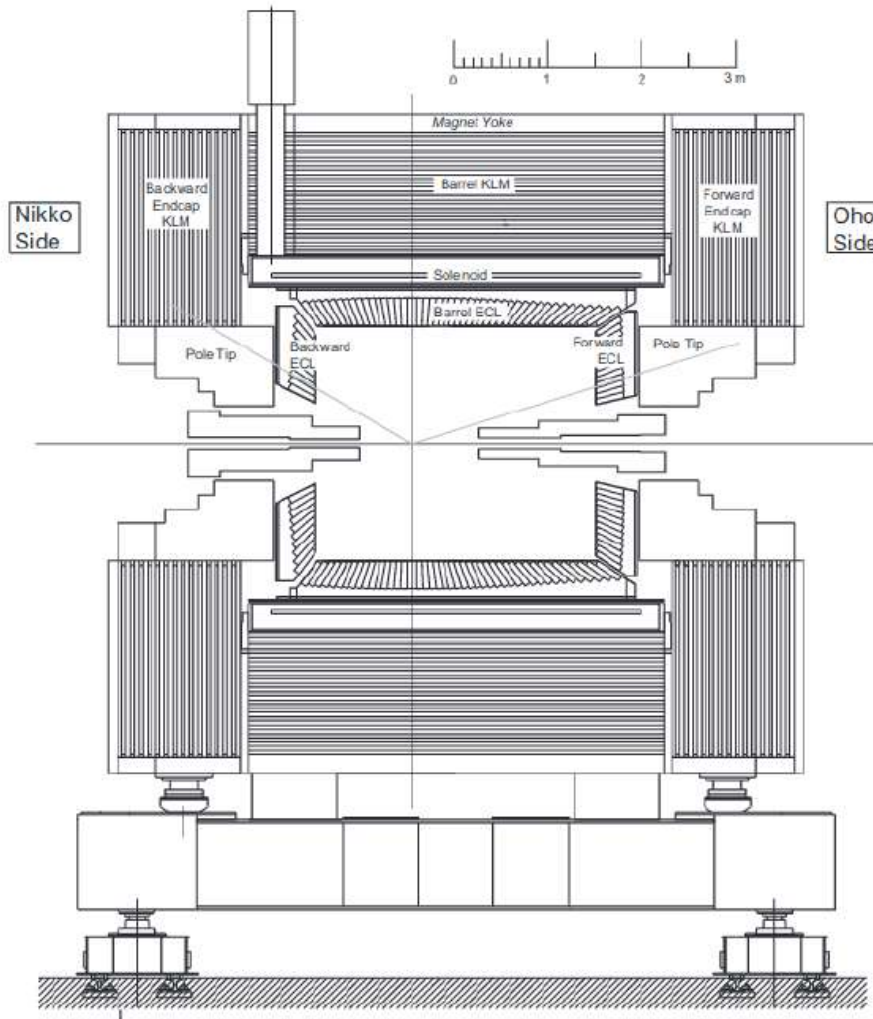


Figure 2.13. – Schematic overview of the outermost Belle II layers, particularly the  $K_L$  and Muon detector (KLM) with its barrel, frontcap and endcap components. Credits [68]

1299 Due to the very different properties of the three tracking detectors (PXD, SVD and  
 1300 CDC), different algorithms are used for each of them. First, the hits in the CDC  
 1301 are filtered and reconstructed using two separate algorithms: a global track-finding  
 1302 algorithm based on the Legendre algorithm and a cellular automaton algorithm. The  
 1303 outputs of these two algorithms are combined to form CDC tracks. Additionally, a  
 1304 combinatorial Kalman filter is used to enhance the CDC tracks with SVD clusters. The  
 1305 remaining SVD hits are used in a standalone SVD track finder. Finally, the resulting  
 1306 CDC and SVD tracks are extrapolated to the PXD.

1307 The parameters of a track are determined thanks to the track fitting. This includes  
 1308 the position of the point of closest approach to the interaction point, represented in  
 1309 Figure 2.14, defined as:

- 1310 •  $d_0$ , the signed distance of the point of closest approach with respect to the  
 1311 interaction point in the Belle II transverse plane (x,y);
- 1312 •  $z_0$ , z-coordinate of the point-of-closest-approach (beam direction).

1313 The distance ( $dr, dz$ ) of the point of closest approach between charged particles  
 1314 (tracks) with respect to the interaction point is derived from those two parameters.  
 1315 For particles that are obtained by combining multiple final state particles, like a  $\tau^-$ ,  
 1316 the ( $dr, dz$ ) variables are taken as the distance between the reconstructed vertex and  
 the interaction point.

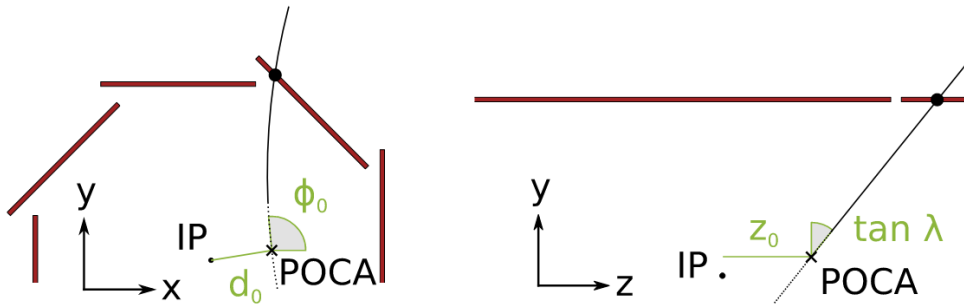


Figure 2.14. – Scheme of the helix trajectory (tracks) in the Belle II detector transverse plane (left) and in the beam direction (right) with the track's parameters: the coordinates of the point of closest approach (POCA)  $d_0$ ,  $z_0$  and the angles  $\phi_0$ ,  $\lambda$ . The first PXD layer is displayed for visual guidance.

1317 Unfortunately, finding tracks is not always flawless, and in multiple cases can lead  
 1318 to a failed reconstruction of tracks. The track finding efficiency quantifies the number  
 1319 of charged particles that are not successfully reconstructed as tracks due to the inef-  
 1320 ficiency of algorithms or detectors. There are instances where a reconstructed track  
 1321 may be, in fact, a fake track. This occurs when it includes hits from the beam-induced  
 1322 background or combines hits from two different particles. Another misreconstruction  
 1323 possibility is a clone track, where multiple tracks are reconstructed from hits left by  
 1324 the same particle.

1326 In the Belle II experiment, the ability to accurately track particles produced after  
 1327 collisions was studied [92]. Specifically, the focus was on tracking efficiency, which was

1328 measured by analyzing  $e^+e^- \rightarrow \tau^- [\rightarrow \pi^- \pi^+ \pi^- \nu_\tau] \tau^+ [\ell^+ \bar{\nu}_\ell \nu_\tau]$  events where  $\ell$  can be  
 1329 either an electron or a muon. By comparing the number of instances where a charged  
 1330 pion was missing or properly reconstructed, it was found that tracking efficiency  
 1331 ranged from 75% at low transverse momenta to 95% around  $4\text{ GeV}/c$ . However, the  
 1332 efficiency decreased as the track got closer to the beam axis (at small or large polar  
 1333 angles), but remained constant at around 90% regardless of the azimuthal angle. The  
 1334 calibrated discrepancy between the efficiencies measured in data ( $\varepsilon_{data}$ ) and Monte  
 1335 Carlo simulation ( $\varepsilon_{MC}$ ) is denoted by  $\delta^*$ , which was found to be below 0.5% overall.

## 1336 2.4. The trigger system

1337 A significant challenge raised by increasing the instantaneous luminosity is fac-  
 1338 ing the large event rate, considering the beam-induced and luminosity-dependent  
 1339 backgrounds. For Belle II, the estimated event rate for the principal physics processes  
 1340 is 20kHz for the planned luminosity of  $8 \times 10^{35} \text{ cm}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ . The beam-induced and  
 1341 luminosity-dependent background sources are mainly low multiplicity processes: for  
 1342 example, the Touschek effect, the radiative Bhabha ( $e^+e^- \rightarrow e^+e^-\gamma$ ), and the two-  
 1343 photon ( $e^+e^- \rightarrow e^+e^-e^+e^-$ ) processes can be trivially discriminated from  $B\bar{B}$ , with  
 1344 high charged track multiplicity, by a trigger based on the number of tracks. Nonethe-  
 1345 less, it is tricky to distinguish interesting low multiplicity processes as  $\tau$ -pair decays  
 1346 or dark photons from low multiplicity backgrounds. The Belle II trigger system archi-  
 1347 tecture is based on two levels, a level-1 hardware trigger [93] followed by the software  
 High Level Trigger (HLT) [94] illustrated in Figure 2.15:

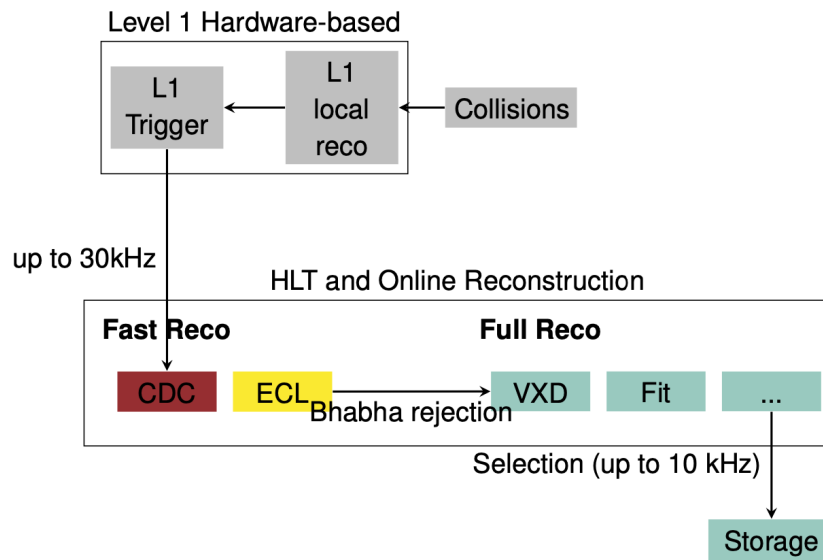


Figure 2.15. – Workflow of the two levels of the trigger system. The first stage is hardware-based and called L1, while the second relies on a fast software reconstruction and is called HLT. Credit [68]

1349 The L1 trigger or low-level is implemented for a 30 kHz maximum output rate and  
 1350 a  $5\mu\text{s}$  latency. It gathers information from sub-trigger systems, mainly from the  
 1351 CDC and ECL. These are merged through a global reconstruction logic and a global  
 1352 decision logic that gives the trigger output signal. The CDC trigger system is based on  
 1353 3D tracking, which allows retrieving the  $z$  position of the tracks. The  $z$  coordinates  
 1354 will enable us to discriminate the background with a displacement along  $z$ , such as  
 1355 Touschek intra-bunch scattering. The ECL complete the trigger scheme by adding  
 1356 two more pieces of information: the total energy trigger sensitive to events with high  
 1357 electromagnetic energy deposition and the isolated cluster counter sensitive to multi-  
 1358 hadronic events with low energy cluster or minimum ionizing particles. In addition,  
 1359 the ECL trigger can distinguish the back-to-back topology from the Bhabha scattering.  
 1360 The second trigger stage is based on software called HLT and aims to reduce the  
 1361 output rate to 10 kHz. Events passing the L1 trigger are fully reconstructed offline  
 1362 using all subsectors information except PXD, where a region of interest is defined. The  
 1363 HLT filter was turned on in 2021.

## 1364 2.5. Particle Identification

The sub-detectors (SVD, CDC, TOP, ARICH, ECL, and KLM) collect information and analyze it independently to determine the likelihood of each charged particle hypothesis  $\mathcal{L}_i^s$ . These likelihoods can be combined to create a global likelihood ratio, referred to as PID, using the equation:

$$\text{PID} = \frac{\mathcal{L}_i}{\mathcal{L}_e + \mathcal{L}_\mu + \mathcal{L}_\pi + \mathcal{L}_K + \mathcal{L}_p + \mathcal{L}_d} \quad (2.10)$$

Here,  $\mathcal{L}_i$  represents the likelihood, calculated as:

$$\mathcal{L}_i = \prod_{s \in S} \mathcal{L}_i^s \quad (2.11)$$

1365 where  $S = \{SVD, CDC, TOP, ARICH, ECL, KLM\}$ . The variable  $i$  can be any of the  
 1366 following particles: electron ( $e$ ), muon ( $\mu$ ), pion ( $\pi$ ), kaon ( $K$ ), proton ( $p$ ), or deuteron  
 1367 ( $d$ ). This method is referred to as "global" as it takes into account all particle types,  
 1368 unlike "binary" calculations that only consider one particle type as a reference. The  
 1369 denominator in the equation represents the sum of likelihoods for  $i$  and the reference  
 1370 particle type.

1371 For example, muon identification mainly relies on CDC and KLM detectors. The  
 1372 tracks are extrapolated with the pion mass hypothesis reconstructed by the CDC and  
 1373 check if the predicted KLM outer layer crossed fits with the measured hits. Then  
 1374 the track extrapolation is reran with the muon hypothesis mass from the inner layer.  
 1375 Finally, the muon likelihood is computed by comparing predicted and measured  
 1376 ranges and the goodness of track fit. The muon detection efficiency reaches 90% for  
 1377 momenta larger than  $1\text{ GeV}/c$ , while for the  $K_L^0$ , the efficiency is about 80% at  $3\text{ GeV}/c$ .

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.6. Overview of the Belle II Analysis Software

1378 Another method of identifying leptons is also available. This method involves  
 1379 combining several [ECL](#) measurements, such as shower shapes and pulse shape dis-  
 1380 crimination variables, with other sub-detector likelihoods in a boosted decision tree.  
 1381 The boosted decision tree is trained in both multi-class modes to separate leptons  
 1382 from other charged particle hypotheses and in binary  $\ell$  versus  $\pi$  mode.

1383 Based on the study of  $J/\psi \rightarrow \ell^+ \ell^-$  events [95] where  $\ell = e, \mu$ , the electron and muon  
 1384 identification efficiencies were found to be 86% and 88.5%, respectively, at a PID  
 1385 probability threshold of 0.9. Pion misidentification rates were also measured using  
 1386 the  $K_S^0 \rightarrow \pi^- \pi^+$  decay, with rates of 0.4% for electron candidates and 7.3% for muon  
 1387 candidates.

### 1388 2.6. Overview of the Belle II Analysis Software

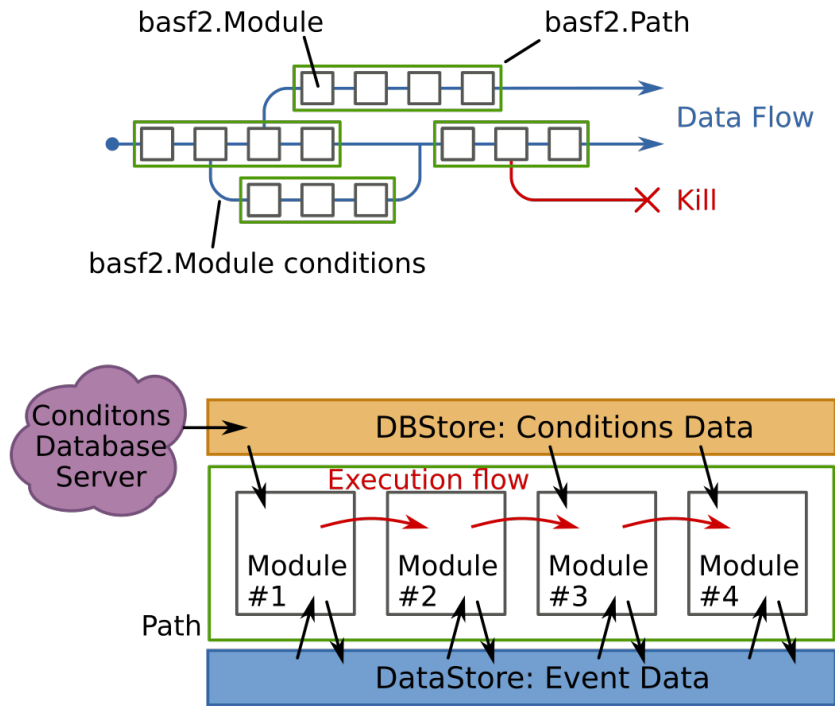


Figure 2.16. – Workflow for the event processing chain under *Belle II Analysis Software Framework (basf2)*. Credits [96]

1389 The *basf2* [97, 96] processes the data by executing small processing blocks (*modules*)  
 1390 in a linear specific execution order, depending on the tasks that it intends to do, inside  
 1391 an instance called *path*, as shown in Figure 2.16. At each step of the *path*, the *modules*  
 1392 can read data stored in the *DataStore*. In addition, sets of conditions can be loaded into  
 1393 the modules by a central database, *DBStore*. These conditions consist of a *payload*, a  
 1394 ROOT file [98] attached to the relevant data-taking periods called "interval of validity".  
 1395 *Payloads* are forming collections called *globaltags* with a unique name and valid only  
 1396 for a specific data-taking period range.

1397 In the physics analysis case, the chain of *modules* is defined and executed into a  
1398 Python script file called *steering file*. In this file, the reconstructed tracks and neutral  
1399 particles are loaded and combined from final to initial states to recover the studied  
1400 decay. Sets of requirements could be defined either on the level of the tracks or on the  
1401 recombined mother particles to select accurately the wanted particles and/or remove  
1402 backgrounds. Once the path is defined, the steering file loops over all the input events  
1403 and the outputs requested variables are stored into a ROOT file called "ntuples".

## 1404 2.7. Dataset production and nomenclature

### 1405 2.7.1. Skimming

1406 Skims [96] refer to a selection applied to data and [Monte-Carlo \(MC\)](#) simulated  
1407 datasets tailored for specific analyses. Their purpose is to reduce the size of the  
1408 original samples by applying specific criteria, allowing analysts to focus on interesting  
1409 events. Skimmed samples are usually around 90% smaller than the original data and  
1410 [MC](#) samples. At Belle II, where  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  of data will be collected, skimming is essential  
1411 to manage CPU load and the number of input files during the production of ntuple.

1412 Skims are run on the mDST format of the produced [MC](#) samples and processed data  
1413 at Belle II to reconstruct a specific list of particles passing different requirements. The  
1414 reconstructed particle information is then written in a new file format, microDST. The  
1415 skim filter removes events that do not meet the skim's criteria.

1416 For example, the [Lepton Flavour Violation \(LFV\)](#) searches in the decays of the  $\tau$   
1417 lepton have their own dedicated skim criteria. If the final state of the signal  $\tau^-$  decays  
1418 contains only one charged particle, the events must satisfy:

- 1419 • Number of good tracks  $< 5$ ,
- 1420 •  $1. < M_\tau < 2. \text{ GeV}/c^2$ ,
- 1421 •  $-1.5 < \Delta E_\tau < 0.5 \text{ GeV}$ .

1422 If the final state of the signal  $\tau^-$  decays contains more than one charged particle:

- 1423 • Number of good tracks  $< 7$ ,
- 1424 •  $1.4 < M_\tau < 2. \text{ GeV}/c^2$ ,
- 1425 •  $-1 < \Delta E_\tau < 0.5 \text{ GeV}$ .

1426 Where  $\Delta E_\tau$  is the difference of energy between the  $\tau^-$  and the beam.

1427 The  $\tau$  [LFV](#) skim is used for all data and MC simulation samples, except for simulated  
1428  $e^+e^- \rightarrow \tau^+\tau^-$  events, which have an excessively high retention rate.

### 1429 2.7.2. Experimental data

1430 Experimental datasets, also called data, are characterised according to different cri-  
1431 teria. The first one is the data-taking period, made up of two numbers: the experiment  
1432 number refers to the long period (a few months for a total of three per year) where the  
1433 experimental condition is relatively stable, and the second is the run number which



## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.7. Dataset production and nomenclature

1434 denotes the short period where the detector is taking data between a start and a stop  
caused by the 8 hours safety stop or an issue in the data taking.

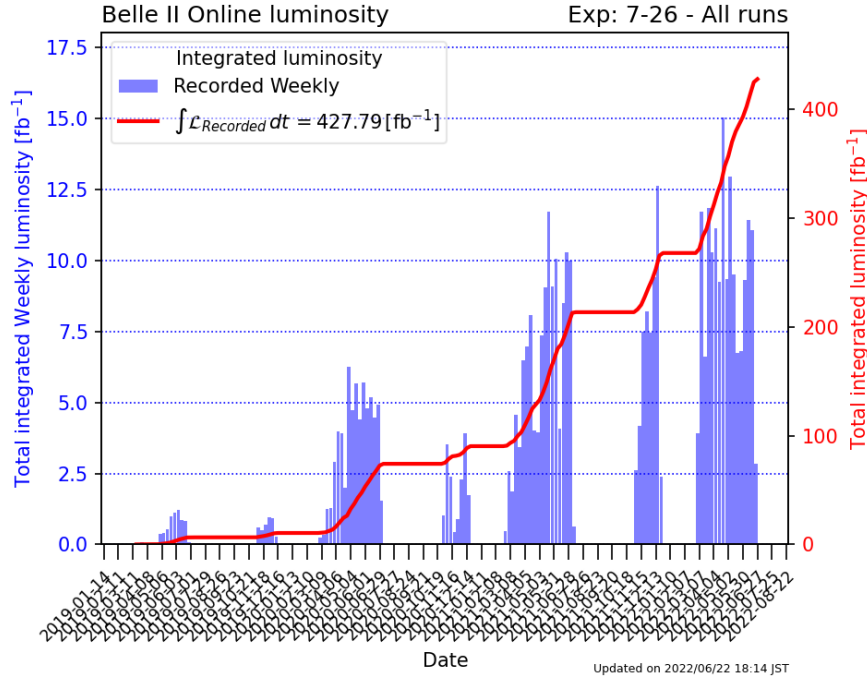


Figure 2.17. – Recorded integrated luminosity per week and total through the phase 3 data taking from 2019 to 2022. Credits [99]

1435  
1436 The data analysed in Chapter 4 have been collected from March 2019 to Autumn  
1437 2022 and is also called **LS1** dataset. More details are given in Table 2.4. The analysed  
1438 data gathers the samples collected at different energies of collision,  $\Upsilon(4S)$ ,  $\Upsilon(4S)$   
off-resonance and  $\Upsilon(5S)$ , for a total luminosity of  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ .

Table 2.4. – Experimental datasets analysed in the following studies and their statistical uncertainty on integrated luminosities with their statistical and systematic uncertainties [80].

Experiment	Beam Energy	Data Taking Period	Offline luminosity $\text{fb}^{-1}$
Total	$\Upsilon(4S)$		$361.654 \pm 0.021 \pm 2.170$
	$\Upsilon(4S)_{\text{offres}}$		$42.279 \pm 0.007 \pm 0.254$
	$\Upsilon(5S)_{\text{scan}}$		$19.661 \pm 0.004 \pm 0.118$

1439

### 1440 2.7.3. Monte-Carlo simulated data

1441 Physics analysis requires some data samples produced by simulation in addition  
1442 to experimental data. They allow us to get a lot of unknown information in data, like

## 2. The Belle II experiment – 2.7. Dataset production and nomenclature

1443 the true identity of the particles used in the reconstructed decay chain. To get these  
 1444 simulated samples, events are generated following a given physics process thanks to a  
 1445 dedicated generator based on Monte-Carlo simulation packages, listed in Table 2.5.  
 1446 To mimic the data-taking conditions simulations, simulated beam backgrounds and  
 static detector conditions are stored in the *basf2* release used to run the simulations.

Table 2.5. – Generators for each simulated physics process [100].

Physics process	Generator
<i>B/D</i> meson decays (exclusive final state)	<i>EvtGen</i> [101]
<i>B/D</i> meson decays (inclusive final state)	<i>PYTHIA</i> [102]
Light $q\bar{q}$ continuum	
$e^+e^- \rightarrow \tau^+\tau^-$	<i>KKMC</i> [103]
$\tau$ decays	<i>TAUOLA</i> [104]
$e^+e^- \rightarrow e^+e^-(\gamma)/\gamma\gamma(\gamma)$	<i>BABAYAGA.NLO</i> [105, 106]
$e^+e^- \rightarrow e^+e^-\ell^+\ell^-$ ( $\ell = e, \mu$ )	<i>AAFH</i> [107]

1447  
 1448 On top of the generated events is applied the interaction with the detector simulated  
 1449 thanks to *Geant4* [108] while *Opera3D/TOSCA* [109] software gives a magnetic field. In  
 1450 the end, the trigger is simulated by **Trigger SIMulation (TSIM)** [96].

1451 In the search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decays presented in Chapter 4, the used simulated  
 1452 **MC** dataset was produced during the 15<sup>th</sup> official Monte Carlo (MC15) production  
 1453 campaign. The simulated samples used are composed of the following:

- 1454 • signal samples with one over the ten million of  $e^+e^- \rightarrow [\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-] \tau^+$  signal  
 1455 events generated. The simulation is done with *Tauola* by imposing a Lorentz-  
 1456 invariant phase space without any new physics processes,
- 1457 • background samples:  $8 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  of  $\tau^- \tau^+$  **SM** and continuum  $q\bar{q}$  processes with  $\tau^-$   
 1458 **LFV** skim applied at the generation level and the low-multiplicity background  
 1459 samples.

1460 More details on background simulated **MC** samples and their luminosity are given in  
 1461 Table 2.6.

2. The Belle II experiment – 2.7. Dataset production and nomenclature

Table 2.6. – List of the background simulation samples with corresponding integrated luminosities.

Background types	Background decay modes	Sample name	Integrated luminosity
$\tau^-$ -pairs background	$\tau^+\tau^-$	taupair	8000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
Continuum $q\bar{q}$ background	$u\bar{u}$	uubar	8000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$d\bar{d}$	ddbar	8000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$s\bar{s}$	ssbar	8000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$c\bar{c}$	ccbar	8000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
$B$ -pairs background	$B^0\bar{B}^0$	mixed	1000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$B^+B^-$	charged	1000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
Low multiplicity background	$\gamma\gamma$	gg	500 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$e^+e^-\gamma$	ee	100 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$\mu^+\mu^-$	mumu	1000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$e^+e^-e^+e^-$	eeee	200 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$e^+e^-\mu^+\mu^-$	eemumu	200 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$e^+e^-\tau^+\tau^-$	eetautau	2000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$e^+e^-\pi^+\pi^-$	eepipi	1000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$e^+e^-K^+K^-$	eeKK	1000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$e^+e^-p^+p^-$	eepp	1000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$\mu^+\mu^-\mu^+\mu^-$	mumumumu	2000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$\mu^+\mu^-\tau^+\tau^-$	mumutautau	2000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
$\tau^+\tau^-\tau^+\tau^-$	tautautautau	10000 fb <sup>-1</sup>	
Low multiplicity initial state radiation background	$\pi^-\pi^+$	pipiISR	2000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$\pi^-\pi^+\pi^0$	pipipi0ISR	2000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$K^-K^+$	KKISR	2000 fb <sup>-1</sup>
	$K^0\bar{K}^0$	K0K0barISR	2000 fb <sup>-1</sup>

1462 **3. Measurement of the *Belle II* SVD**  
1463 **cluster position resolution**

1464 **Sommaire**

1465 3.1. Definition of Cluster Position Resolution . . . . . 76  
1466 3.1.1. The cluster and its position . . . . . 76  
1467 3.1.2. The cluster position resolution . . . . . 78  
1468 3.1.2.1. The true cluster resolution . . . . . 81  
1469 3.2. Datasets . . . . . 81  
1470 3.2.1. Data Samples and Calibrations . . . . . 81  
1471 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors . . . . . 82  
1472 3.3.1. Evaluation of the feasibility . . . . . 84  
1473 3.3.2. Computation of the cluster position resolution . . . . . 86  
1474 3.3.3. Estimation of uncertainties in the resolution . . . . . 86  
1475 3.3.4. Fiducial Area Selection . . . . . 87  
1476 3.4. Results on the spatial resolution . . . . . 89  
1477 3.5. Conclusions on the spatial resolution . . . . . 91

1478 In Section 2.2.2, we observed that the [Silicon Vertex Detector \(SVD\)](#) plays a vital role  
1479 in reconstructing the decay vertex and low-momentum particles. It offers stand-alone  
1480 tracking capabilities and contributes to charged particle identification through ioni-  
1481 sation energy-loss information. Additionally, it helps extrapolate the tracks towards  
1482 the [PiXel Detector \(PXD\)](#) and define the area of interest to minimise the [PXD](#) data  
1483 size. A precise cluster position resolution is essential for [SVD](#) reconstruction, as it  
1484 provides crucial input for improving the quality of reconstructed tracks and vertices  
1485 and correctly propagating the uncertainty on the track extrapolation position. In  
1486 this chapter, we will explore a method that uses overlapping sensors to measure the  
1487 resolution of cluster positions.

1488 **3.1. Definition of Cluster Position Resolution**

1489 **3.1.1. The cluster and its position**

1490 A charged particle passing through the silicon bulk knocks electrons from the atoms,  
1491 creating electron-hole pairs. Electrons and holes drift to the opposite sensor sides and

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.1. Definition of Cluster Position Resolution

1492 are collected by the sensing strips. The arrangement of sensing strips in the sensor  
 1493 is shown in Figure 3.1. To identify the strips activated by a single charged particle, a  
 1494 clustering algorithm gathers groups of adjacent activated strips into an object called  
 1495 cluster [12, 68, 84]. To build a cluster, strips must pass the online zero suppression: a  
 1496 minimum signal of three times the strip noise ( $N_i$ ) and consecutive strips have to get  
 1497 at least one strip with a minimum signal of five times  $N_i$ . The available information  
 1498 for each strip is the six sampled amplitudes, the noise from local calibrations, and the  
 1499 value of the gain from local calibrations that allows reconstruction of the electrical  
 1500 charge.

The cluster position ( $m$ ) is computed using the charge ( $S_i$ ) and position of the centre of the readout implant ( $X_i$ ) of its strips, with the **Center-of-Gravity (CoG)** algorithm:

$$m = \frac{\sum_{i=1}^N X_i S_i}{\sum_{i=1}^N S_i}, \quad (3.1)$$

where  $N$  is the number of strips in the cluster, also called cluster size later. The associated cluster position error is parameterized as a function of  $x = \sqrt{N \cdot \text{SNR}}$ ,  $\text{SNR}$  is the signal over noise ratio, as:

$$\sigma_m = \text{pitch} \cdot \sqrt{\left(\frac{a_1}{a_2 + x}\right)^2 + (bx)^2 + c} \quad (3.2)$$

1501 were the parameters  $a_1$ ,  $a_2$ ,  $b$  and  $c$  have been extracted from the **Monte-Carlo (MC)**  
 1502 for the different sensor types and sides to match the **MC** resolution. Scale factors for  
 1503 the errors are applied to data to correct the resolution disagreement between data and  
 1504 **MC**.

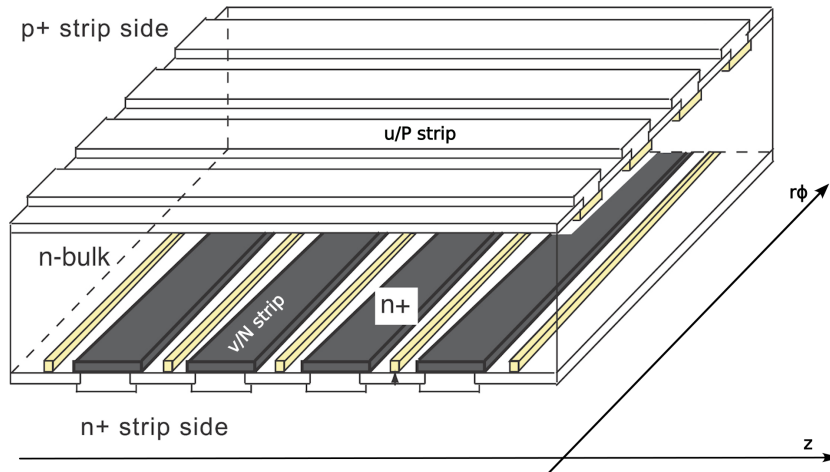


Figure 3.1. – Scheme of the **SVD** sensors. The sensing strips are implanted in a Silicon bulk on the two sensor sides. Following the two sides, the strips are arranged orthogonally. So respectively, u/P (v/N) sides strips measure the position along the  $r\phi$  ( $z$ ) direction.

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.1. Definition of Cluster Position Resolution

Each cluster is assigned its position  $m$ , the position of the unbiased extrapolation of the track on the sensor  $t$  and its error  $\sigma_t$ , and the true position, which is only known in simulation samples, as shown in Figure 3.2. The track extrapolated position is unbiased because the track is extrapolated on the sensor plane, not considering the cluster on that sensor used for the resolution measurement. The distances, called residuals, between these three positions are computed such as:

$$\varepsilon_m = m - x, \quad (3.3)$$

$$\varepsilon_t = t - x, \quad (3.4)$$

$$R = m - t, \quad (3.5)$$

1505 where  $\varepsilon_m$  is the cluster position true residual,  $\varepsilon_t$  the track position true residual and  $R$   
 1506 the measured residual. Example distributions of the measured residuals, true cluster  
 1507 and track residual, and track extrapolation error are shown in Figure 3.3 for layer 4 u/P  
 1508 clusters.

#### 1509 3.1.2. The cluster position resolution

By definition, the cluster position resolution  $\sigma_{cl}$  is the deviation of the cluster position  $m$  with respect to the true position  $t$  [110]. The  $\sigma_{cl}$  can be computed as the square root of the variance of the true cluster residual  $\varepsilon_m = m - x$ , such as:

$$\sigma_{cl}^2 = E[(m - x)^2] - E[(m - x)]^2, \quad (3.6)$$

where  $E[y]$  is expectation value of  $y$ . Assuming that the reconstructed cluster position is unbiased we have  $E[(m - x)] = 0$ , as shown in Figure 3.3. Hence:

$$\sigma_{cl}^2 = E[(m - x)^2] = E[\varepsilon_m^2]. \quad (3.7)$$

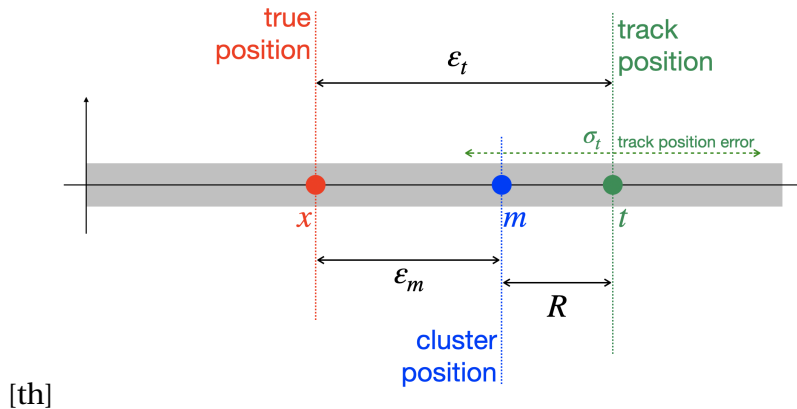


Figure 3.2. – Simplified representation of the true position  $x$ , reconstructed cluster position  $m$ , extrapolated track position  $t$ , true cluster residual  $\varepsilon_m$ , true track residual  $\varepsilon_t$ , and measured residual  $R$ . Credits [110]

3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.1. Definition of Cluster Position Resolution

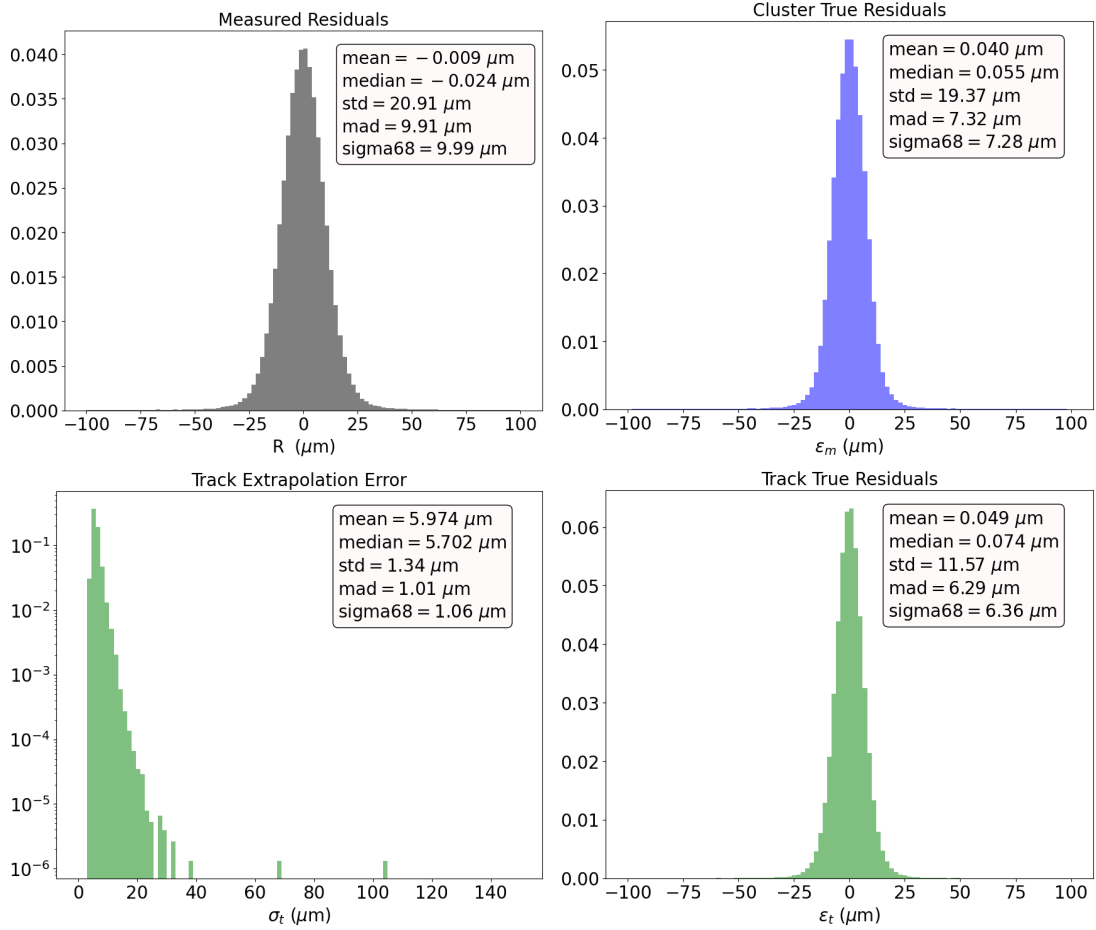


Figure 3.3. – Distributions of the measured residuals  $R$  (top left), true cluster residual  $\varepsilon_m$  (top right), true track residual  $\varepsilon_t$  (bottom right) and track extrapolation error  $\sigma_t$  (bottom left), for the Layer 4 u/P side clusters from simulated di-muon events. Credits [110]

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.1. Definition of Cluster Position Resolution

1510 According to this definition, the resolution  $\sigma_{cl}$  cannot be measured in data samples  
 1511 where the true position  $x$  is unknown. But a true resolution  $\sigma_{true}$  can be derived in  
 1512 simulation to be used as a standard to evaluate the correctness of a  $\sigma_{cl}$  estimator.

1513 So the cluster position resolution  $\sigma_{cl}$  has to be estimated using the available quanti-  
 1514 ties:  $m$ ,  $t$ ,  $\sigma_t$  and  $R = m - t$ . Several dependencies must be taken into account *e.g.* the  
 1515 track extrapolation error depends on the lever arm of the extrapolation, on the track  
 1516 incident angle, and the error on the nearest measurement. Nonetheless, the method  
 1517 detailed below is limited by the statistics. The only dependencies taken into account  
 1518 are the SVD layer and the strip side u/P or v/N.

The resolution can be computed as the variance of the measured residuals  $R = m - t$ , given by:

$$Var(R) = E[(m - t)^2] \quad (3.8)$$

1519 thanks to the unbiased measured residuals  $E[(m - t)] = 0$ , which is usually true thanks  
 1520 to the alignment calibration. The term  $E[(m - t)^2]$  can be expanded by summing and  
 1521 subtracting  $x$ :

$$Var(R) = E[(m - x + x - t)^2] \quad (3.9)$$

$$= E[(m - x)^2 + (x - t)^2 + 2(m - x)(x - t)] \quad (3.10)$$

$$= E[(m - x)^2] + E[(x - t)^2] + 2E[(m - x)(x - t)] \quad (3.11)$$

$$= \sigma_{cl}^2 + E[\epsilon_t^2] + 2E[(m - x)(x - t)]. \quad (3.12)$$

It is assumed that there is no correlation between the true cluster residuals and track residuals, meaning that  $E[(m - x)(x - t)] = 0$ . Moreover, the track extrapolation is computed without considering the cluster position. The validity of such approximation is checked in Figure 3.4, where no hints for any correlation between  $\epsilon_t$  and  $\epsilon_m$  is shown and the median of  $\epsilon_m \cdot \epsilon_t$  is compatible with null measurement, being smaller than  $0.1 \mu\text{m}^2$ . Under this assumption, Equation 3.9 can be rewritten as:

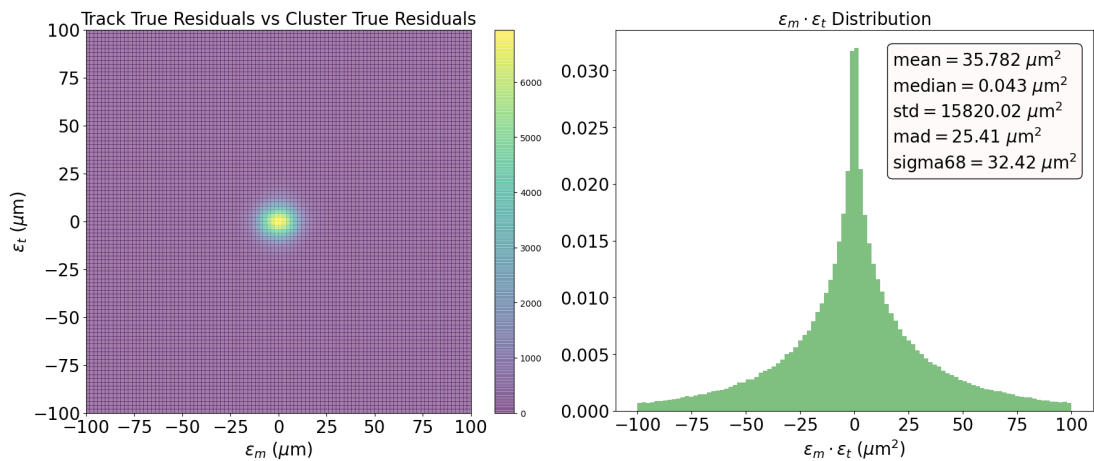


Figure 3.4. – Layer 4 u/P side true cluster residual  $\epsilon_m$  vs true track residuals  $\epsilon_t$  (left) and  $\epsilon_m \cdot \epsilon_t$  distribution (right). Credits [110]



### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.2. Datasets

$$\sigma_{cl}^2 = Var(R) - E[\varepsilon_t^2]. \quad (3.13)$$

The track extrapolation error can be used as an estimate of the standard deviation of the track's true residuals, and we can write  $E[\varepsilon_t^2] = E[\sigma_t^2] = E[\sigma_t]^2 + Var(\sigma_t)$ . The assumption is detailed in Appendix A.1. Consequently, the Equation 3.13 becomes:

$$\sigma_{cl}^2 = Var(R) - E[\sigma_t]^2 - Var(\sigma_t). \quad (3.14)$$

#### 1522 3.1.2.1. The true cluster resolution

For optimization purposes, we also consider the true cluster position resolution from simulation, which is defined as:

$$\sigma_{true}^2 \equiv E[\varepsilon_m^2] = E[\varepsilon_m]^2 + Var(\varepsilon_m) = Var(\varepsilon_m). \quad (3.15)$$

1523 Its distribution, as shown by the plots in Figure 3.3 and 29, has two components and  
1524 large tails that point to a non-Gaussian behaviour.

A dedicated study for the optimal estimator is described in Appendix A.2, and the true resolution can finally be extracted from a fit to the true residuals on the simulation by using the 68% coverage, calculated by taking half the difference between the 84th and 16th quantiles, which results in:

$$\sigma_{true}^2 = E[\varepsilon_m^2] \simeq \text{sigma-68}^2(\varepsilon_m) = 7,3 \mu\text{m}, \quad (3.16)$$

1525 The calculation was performed using the entire range of  $\varepsilon_m$ . It's worth noting that this  
1526 value is actually better than the estimated value based on the pitch (11  $\mu\text{m}$ ) listed in  
1527 Table 2.3, which was expected.

## 1528 3.2. Datasets

1529 In this section, we briefly describe the cluster reconstruction algorithms, the data  
1530 and the simulation MC samples used to perform the measurements, including the  
1531 selection criteria.

1532 We have used the basf2 release-06 for the reconstruction and simulation and the  
1533 prompt calibration of the data.

### 1534 3.2.1. Data Samples and Calibrations

1535 The resolutions have been measured on events of  $e^+e^-$  annihilation into a pair of  
1536 muon (di-muon events), collected during the summer and autumn runs of 2020.

1537 Only clusters associated with selected tracks are then considered. Tracks are re-  
1538 quired to satisfy the same criteria in data and simulation<sup>1</sup>, reported in Table 3.1.

1539

---

1. though they are slightly different for the different methods of extraction of the resolution.

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors

1540 Simulated events are required to pass the same selection criteria applied to the data  
 1541 (see table 3.1), and additionally, the true position  $x$  is required to be less than 20 cm  
 1542 for both directions ( $u/P$  and  $v/N$ ), to ensure well-defined cluster position  $m$ .

### 1543 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping 1544 sensors

1545 The track extrapolation error plays a crucial role in the computation of the cluster  
 1546 position resolution. From simulated data, it is known that this error can be inaccurately  
 1547 estimated for some tracks, and there is no available information on the accuracy  
 1548 of the track error estimation in real data. An alternative method relying on overlapping  
 1549 sensors, Figure 3.5, is proposed in this discussion to mitigate the impact of this  
 1550 uncertainty on the final results.

The overlap or pairs method is used to determine the cluster position resolution using overlapping sensors. This method was previously implemented by the CMS experiment [15]. Only tracks that cross two consecutive ladders (internal,  $i$  and external  $e$ ) of the same layer are considered. The resolution is obtained from the distribution of a combination of the residual of the internal ladder  $R_i$  and the residual of the external ladder  $R_e$ , known as the double residual  $\Delta R$ :

$$\Delta R = \frac{R_i - R_e}{\sqrt{2}}. \quad (3.17)$$

1551 The predicted hit is here computed as the intercept on a given layer of the track  
 1552 fitted by excluding the clusters on the layer under study when applying the track  
 1553 reconstruction algorithm and extrapolating the results to the overlaps region, *i.e.* an  
 1554 unbiased extrapolation.

1555 This strategy can cancel errors in extrapolated track positions through the double  
 1556 residual difference. As a result, it is possible to separate the contribution of tracking  
 1557 precision from the actual cluster position resolution. Additionally, the measurement  
 1558 is only marginally affected by Coulomb scattering due to the small radial distance  
 1559 between the two overlapped sensors.

In the overlap method, the cluster position resolution is defined, as described in

Variable	Selection criteria
transverse momentum	$p_T > 1 \text{ GeV}/c$
number of PXD hits	$> 0$
number of CDC hits	$> 20$

Table 3.1. – Summary of the track selection criteria used for the different resolution extraction methods.

3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors

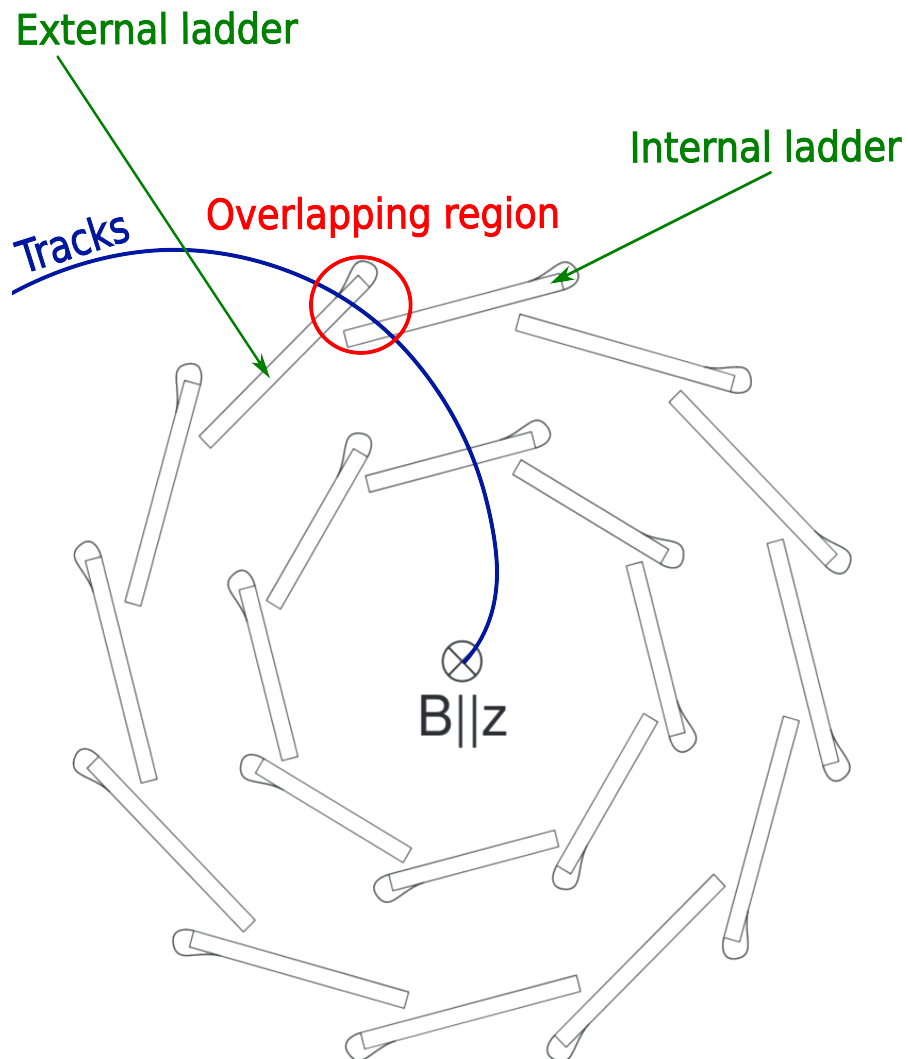


Figure 3.5. – Schematic view of the SVD volume in the  $r\phi$ -direction with tracks passing through two consecutive sensors (internal and external) of the same layer called overlapping region.

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors

Appendix A.3, as the double residual variance:

$$\sigma_{cl}^2 = Var(\Delta R). \quad (3.18)$$

The overlap method assumes that both residuals are measured in the same plane, which is not the case for the SVD because of its windmill architecture (refer to Figure 3.5). Therefore, in order to properly compare residuals measured on the same plane, the projection of the external residual onto the internal ladder that is parallel to the track is computed for the u/P side sensors by applying a correction factor  $C$  and re-normalize event by event:

$$\Delta R = \frac{R_i - CR_e}{\sqrt{1 + C^2}}, \quad (3.19)$$

with:

$$C = \frac{\cos(a_e)}{\cos(a_i)}. \quad (3.20)$$

1560 Further details on how this geometrical correction is determined are reported in  
1561 Appendix A.4.

1562 Three important preliminary steps are needed for the overlaps measurement: first,  
1563 we study whether we have enough candidates to develop the method; second, the  
1564 definition of the track selection process. And finally, the way to extract the variance of  
1565 the double residual distribution.

#### 1566 3.3.1. Evaluation of the feasibility

1567 One major challenge when using this method is ensuring a sizeable overlapping  
1568 region and enough track candidates. A small overlapping region can create two issues.  
1569 Firstly, if the available area is too small, the number of tracks traversing the overlapping  
1570 region on two consecutive layers will be proportionally reduced. Secondly, on the  
1571 u/P side, the number of available strips is limited because the strips are aligned along  
1572 the length of the overlapping region in the u-direction. The strips considered for the  
1573 study in u/P are illustrated in Figure 3.6 where only the strip positions that meet the  
1574 requirement of overlapping with the sensors are shown.

The estimated number of strips  $N_{strips}$  per layer is determined from the total range in strip positions divided by the pitch [111]:

$$N_{strips} = \frac{std(x_{strips})}{p}, \quad (3.21)$$

1575 where  $std$  refers to the usual standard deviation,  $x_{strips}$  is the SVD strip position range  
1576 in the overlaps area and  $p$  the pitch readout depending on the sensor type:

- 1577 • Layer 3 (u/P):  $p = 50 \mu\text{m}$ ,
- 1578 • Layers 4, 5 & 6 (u/P):  $p = 75 \mu\text{m}$ .

1579 The results are provided in Table 3.2. It should be noted that whereas the number  
1580 of strips in the outer layers is reasonable, the case of layer 3 is more problematic,

3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors

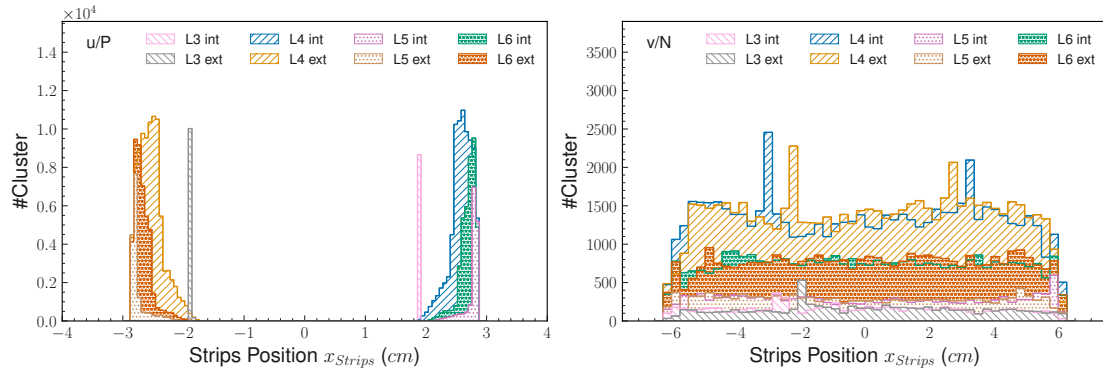


Figure 3.6. – Position of activated strips by a hit of the u/P (left) and v/N (right) for each layer and the relative ladder’s position of the overlap.

Table 3.2. – Estimated number of strips  $N_{strips}$  of the u/P side in the overlapping region for data.

Layers	Ladders	
	Internal	External
3	5.76	6.15
4	49.49	56.12
5	36.04	40.78
6	38.44	43.09

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors

1581 with a maximum number of strips in the overlaps range equal to 6. Additionally, the  
 1582 requirement of hits in two consecutive ladders on the same layer further reduces the  
 1583 sample size available for the study.

#### 1584 3.3.2. Computation of the cluster position resolution

In the overlapping method, the cluster position resolution  $\sigma_{cl}$  is extracted from the double residual  $\Delta R$  distribution, defined in Equation 3.17, as a function of the sensor sides (u/P and v/N) and layers (from 3 to 6), as in the Figure 3.7. The  $\Delta R$  histogram is fitted with a student's t-distribution:

$$T(X, \nu, \mu, \sigma) = \frac{e^{\Gamma(\frac{\nu+1}{2}) - \Gamma(\frac{\nu}{2})}}{\sigma \sqrt{\pi \nu}} \left( 1 + \frac{(X - \mu)^2}{\sigma^2 \nu} \right)^{-\frac{\nu+1}{2}}, \quad (3.22)$$

1585 with the parameters:

- 1586 • the number of degrees of freedom  $\nu$ ,
- 1587 • the mean of the distribution  $\mu$ ,
- 1588 • the variance  $\sigma^2 \frac{\nu}{\nu-2}$ .

1589 The student's t-distribution is found to describe non-Gaussian tails better. The smaller  
 1590 values of the parameter  $\nu$  account for heavier tails, while for larger values of  $\nu$ , the  
 1591 distribution tends to be a Gaussian. Moreover, the student's t-fit results in the best  $\chi^2$   
 1592 agreement and the smallest fit parameters uncertainties among the tried functions.

1593 The resolution  $\sigma_{cl}$  is then assessed using the sigma-68 estimator, which involves  
 1594 finding the half distance between the 84<sup>th</sup> and 16<sup>th</sup> quantiles of the student's t-fitted  
 distribution [112].

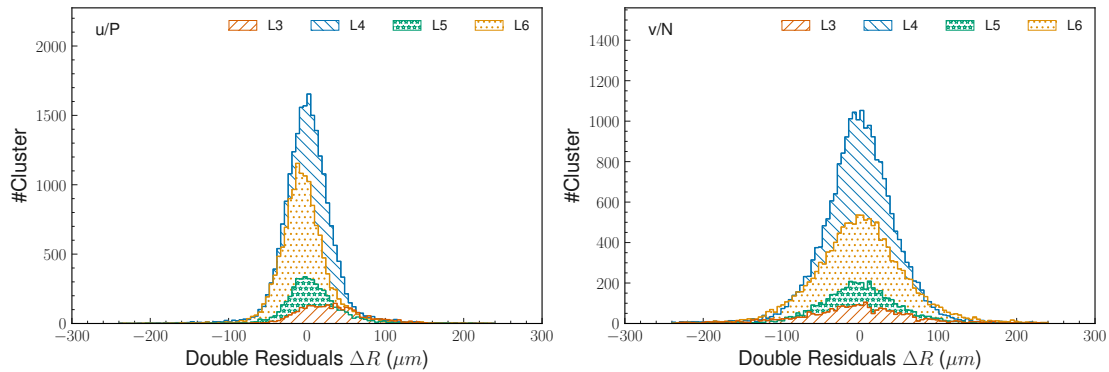


Figure 3.7. – Distribution of the Double residuals ( $\Delta R$ ) for each side and layer using di-muon data.

1595

#### 1596 3.3.3. Estimation of uncertainties in the resolution

1597 While the sigma-68 estimator is a robust measure of the distribution's width, the  
 1598 resolution uncertainty could no longer be determined by propagating the error from

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors

1599 the fit parameters. So, the statistical uncertainty is estimated by varying the fit's  
 1600 parameters within their maximal errors. The procedure to estimate the uncertainties  
 1601 follows:

- 1602 1. Vary all the fit parameters  $p = (N, \mu, \nu, \sigma)$  in their maximal error ranges  
 1603  $p^{Test} \in [p - error(p), p + error(p)]$  determined during the fit,
- 1604 2. Compute the the student's t-distribution  $T^{Test}$  for each sets of parameter's values  
 1605  $p^{Test}$  and get the sigma-68 resolution,
- 1606 3. Statistical error is taken as half the maximal variation of the resolution:  
 1607  $error(\text{sigma-68}) = \frac{\max(\text{sigma-68}) - \min(\text{sigma-68})}{2}$ .

#### 1608 3.3.4. Fiducial Area Selection

1609 When extrapolating the track position  $t$ , it is important to select a fiducial area  
 1610 to exclude the edge sensor region, where the effect of masked strips has not been  
 1611 simulated and could introduce a bias in the track position evaluation. This selection is  
 1612 particularly significant for the overlap method, as it impacts the already low number  
 1613 of strips selected, and a simple geometrical reduction of such area cannot be deployed  
 1614 to not limit too much the sample size.

1615 Figure 3.8 depicts the distribution of the double residual  $\Delta R$ , with bumps in the  
 1616 tail due to the masked strips. The fiducial area selection is optimized as a function  
 1617 of the SVD layer and side separately. The optimal cut value can be determined by  
 1618 comparing the resolutions obtained from data, and MC simulations at different  $t$  cut  
 1619 values, as shown in Figure 3.9. The resolution increases with the number of selected  
 1620 clusters until it reaches a plateau where the overlapping region falls into the fiducial  
 1621 area definition. A threshold is set just before the plateau to ensure enough statistics  
 1622 while maintaining good resolutions. The optimized fiducial area selection is outlined  
 in detail in Table 3.3.

Table 3.3. – Fiducial area selection relying on the extrapolated track postion  $t$  (in cm) projected in the u/P and v/N sides to remove tracks passing in masked strips in the sensor edges.

Layer 3	$ t^{u/P}  < 1.908 \text{ cm} \ \& \  t^{v/N}  < 5.9 \text{ cm}$
Layer 4	$ t^{u/P}  < 2.82 \text{ cm} \ \& \  t^{v/N}  < 5.9 \text{ cm}$
Layer 5	$ t^{u/P}  < 2.84 \text{ cm} \ \& \  t^{v/N}  < 5.9 \text{ cm}$
Layer 6	$ t^{u/P}  < 2.82 \text{ cm} \ \& \  t^{v/N}  < 5.9 \text{ cm}$

1623  
 1624 Figure 3.8 demonstrates the impact of the fiducial area selection, particularly in layer  
 1625 3, where it is more significant. Considering the v/N side case, the position's tracks  
 1626 passing the overlap sensor requirement cover a broader range, making it feasible  
 1627 to keep the geometrical-based selection. As a general rule, this selection leads to a  
 1628 more symmetrical, bell-shaped distribution of the residuals with a smaller width. The  
 1629 fiducial area selection improves the measured resolutions  $\sigma_{cl}$  on data and simulation.

3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.3. Measurement strategy with overlapping sensors

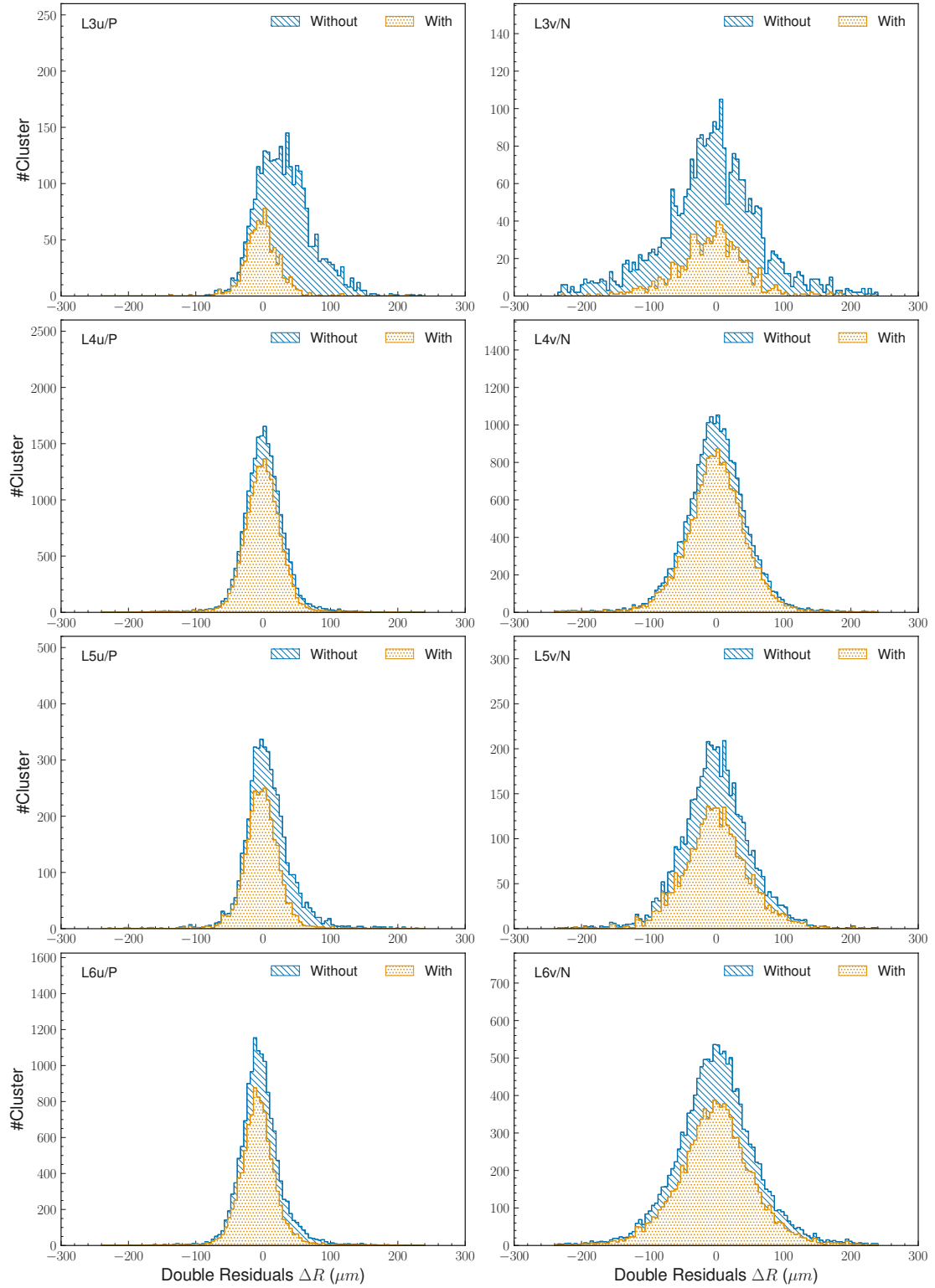


Figure 3.8. – Comparison of the double residual distributions before (blue) and after (orange) applying the fiducial area selection in experiment 14 sample.



### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.4. Results on the spatial resolution

1630 After the selections presented in 3.2.1 and the fiducial area selection, the remaining  
 1631 numbers of clusters by the side and layers are summarized in Table 3.4.

Table 3.4. – Number of clusters passing all selections.

		Number of Clusters		
		After Selections	Before Selections	Relative efficiency
Side u/P	Layer 3	860	3539	24.30%
	Layer 4	18776	36565	51.35%
	Layer 5	3168	7465	42.44%
	Layer 6	10484	20222	51.84%

1631

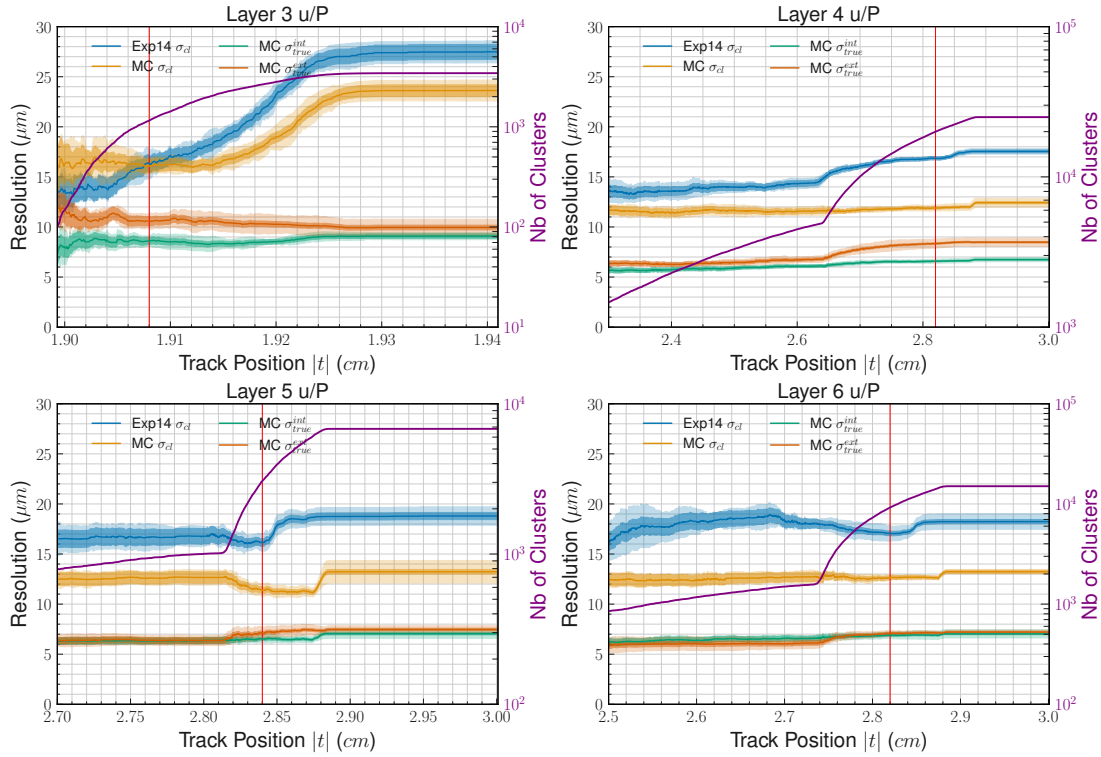


Figure 3.9. – Fiducial area selection optimization for each layer to reduce the Data/MC discrepancy.

## 1632 3.4. Results on the spatial resolution

1633 Using the method of the overlapping sensors, the spatial resolutions, true  $\sigma_{true}$   
 1634 (Monte-Carlo simulations) and measured  $\sigma_{cl}$  (Monte-Carlo simulations and data) are  
 1635 given in Figure 3.10, in functions of the SVD layer and side. The detailed values are  
 1636 reported in Table 3.5.

3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.4. Results on the spatial resolution

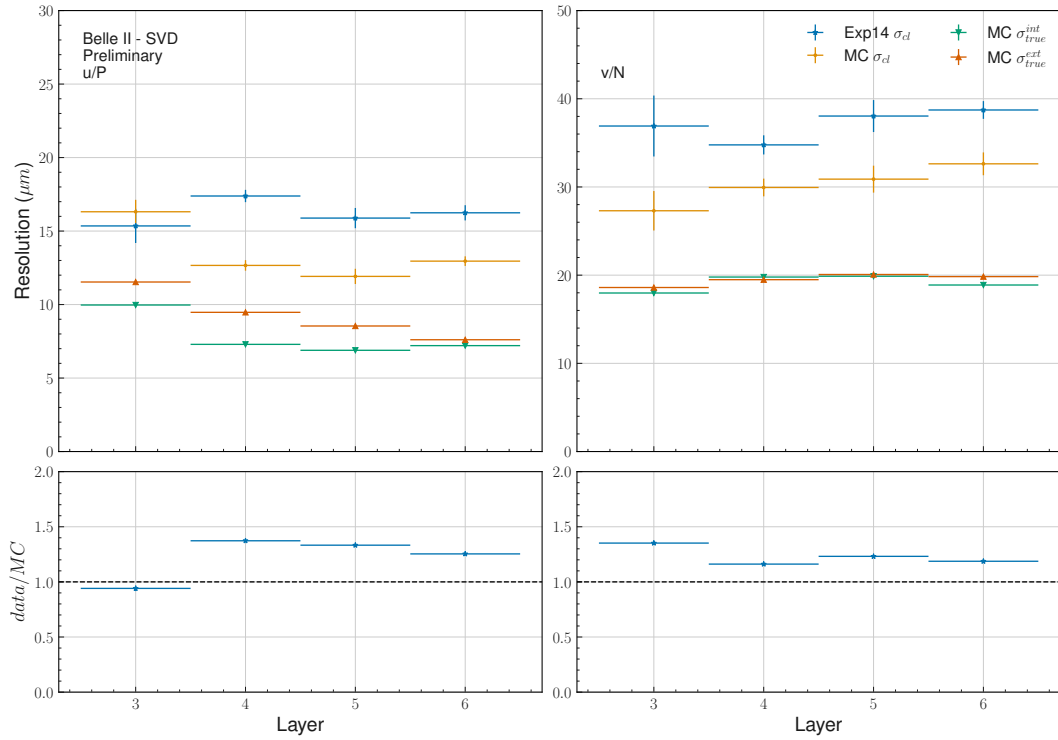


Figure 3.10. – Comparisons of the measured spatial resolution between data-exp14 in blue, Monte-Carlo simulations in orange and the true resolutions in green (internal sensor) and dark orange (external sensor) in top plots. The different resolutions are given in functions of SVD sides; u/P in left plots and v/N side in right plots; and layers. The bottom plots show the resolution ratio between data and simulations.

Table 3.5. – Spatial resolutions ( $\mu\text{m}$ ) results for data and simulations in the sensor layer and side functions. Only statistical uncertainties are given.

Layer	Data		Simulation	
	u/P side	v/N side	u/P side	v/N side
3	$15.3 \pm 1.1$	$36.9 \pm 3.4$	$16.31 \pm 0.81$	$27.3 \pm 2.2$
4	$17.39 \pm 0.42$	$34.7 \pm 1.0$	$12.66 \pm 0.36$	$29.94 \pm 1.0$
5	$15.88 \pm 0.69$	$38. \pm 1.0$	$11.92 \pm 0.52$	$30.8 \pm 1.5$
6	$16.24 \pm 0.52$	$38. \pm 1.0$	$12.95 \pm 0.33$	$32.6 \pm 1.2$

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.5. Conclusions on the spatial resolution

1637 The measured resolutions on data are around  $16\ \mu\text{m}$  along the  $r\phi$  direction (u/P  
1638 side) and  $35\ \mu\text{m}$  along the  $z$ -direction (v/N side). Regarding Figure 3.11, the spatial  
1639 resolution results on the v/N side are similar to the resolution obtained from the strip  
1640 pitch size. However, the overlapping method yielded a slightly higher resolution on  
1641 the u/P side than the strip pitch. This is expected due to the intrinsic limitation of the  
1642 overlapping method in accessing a wider range of incident angles on the u/P side.

1643 Furthermore, Figure 3.10 shows a significant discrepancy between the spatial res-  
1644 olution ( $\sigma_{cl}$ ) and the true resolution  $\sigma_{true}$  in simulations. This disagreement in  
1645 simulation is discussed in Appendix A.5 to infirm potential non-cancellation of the  
tracking uncertainties.

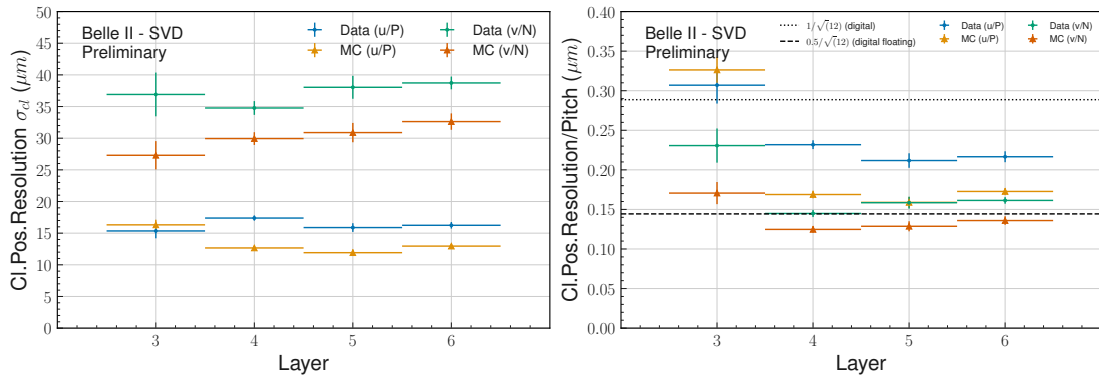


Figure 3.11. – Measured spatial resolutions (right) obtained for data (blue) and simulation (orange) following sides and layers. Measured resolutions divided by the sensor pitch (left) obtained for data (blue) and simulation (orange) following sides and layers.

1646

### 1647 3.5. Conclusions on the spatial resolution

1648 This chapter presents the first results of the Belle II's SVD spatial resolution obtained  
1649 from a method exploiting the overlapping sensor of the same layer described by  
1650 CMS [15]. After adaptation to the SVD geometry, the method gives respectively  $16\ \mu\text{m}$   
1651 ( $35\ \mu\text{m}$ ) for the  $r\phi$  ( $z$ ) direction with a good agreement with the expectations given by  
1652 the strip pitch.

1653 This method was accomplished within a wider study to measure the spatial res-  
1654 olution of the SVD with different methods presented at the 30th Vertex Workshop  
1655 and published [110]. The overlapping method can be compared, in Table 3.6, to the  
1656 Event-by-event and Global methods [110] where the track uncertainty is explicitly  
1657 subtracted at the events or distributions levels, in the same angular range accessible  
1658 to the overlaps method. Unlike the other methods, the overlapping method is robust  
1659 against multiple Coulomb scattering and tracking uncertainty thanks to the small  
1660 distance between the two sensors used. Nevertheless, the limited incident angle range

### 3. Measurement of the Belle II SVD cluster position resolution – 3.5. Conclusions on the spatial resolution

1661 may have caused worse performances for the u/P side compared to the two others,  
 1662 while the overlapping method gives similar results for the v/N side.

Table 3.6. – Summary of the digital (strip pitch based) and measured resolution on data taken at the normal incidence for the Event-by-event and Global methods [110, 16]. For the overlapping sensor method, the average on the whole accessible angular range is shown.

	Digital	Event-by-event	Global	Overlap
Layer 3 u/P ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	7	7	9	15
Layer 456 u/P ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	11	10	11	16-17
Layer 3 v/N ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	23	24	23	33
Layer 456 v/N ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	35	32	35	29-36

1663 To improve the method and the study, a better knowledge of the track uncertainty  
 1664 cancellation in the  $r\phi$  direction is necessary. To perform such studies, an idea will be  
 1665 to access the tracking information obtained by doing a fit considering only one of the  
 1666 two sensors in the overlapping regions. A fudge factor could also be designed in order  
 1667 to correct the simulations in order to give a more accurate resolution close to the one  
 1668 obtained in the data. Finally, we can design a mode to perform the spatial resolution  
 1669 measurement in data acquisition live to monitor the SVD performances.

1670 **4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton**  
 1671 **flavour violating decays**

1672 **Sommaire**

1673	4.1. Untagged analysis strategy . . . . .	94
1674	4.2. Event reconstruction . . . . .	98
1675	4.2.1. Particle lists . . . . .	98
1676	4.2.1.1. Charged particle lists requirements . . . . .	98
1677	4.2.1.2. Photon and neutral particle lists requirements . . . . .	98
1678	4.2.1.3. Event shape and kinematics . . . . .	99
1679	4.2.2. Signal reconstruction . . . . .	99
1680	4.2.3. Rest-of-Event building . . . . .	99
1681	4.2.4. Additional requirements . . . . .	100
1682	4.2.4.1. Signal region . . . . .	100
1683	4.2.4.2. Trigger lines and skimming . . . . .	102
1684	4.2.4.3. Signal truth matching . . . . .	102
1685	4.2.5. Signal efficiency and background composition . . . . .	106
1686	4.3. Background suppression . . . . .	106
1687	4.3.1. Cut-based preselection . . . . .	106
1688	4.3.2. Boosted Decision Tree classifier . . . . .	111
1689	4.3.2.1. Boosted Decision Tree algorithm . . . . .	111
1690	4.3.2.2. k-folding algorithm . . . . .	113
1691	4.3.2.3. Discriminating variables for the Boosted Decision Tree (BDT) classifier . . . . .	114
1692	4.3.2.4. BDT parameters optimisation . . . . .	114
1693	4.3.3. Background rejection results . . . . .	121
1694	4.3.3.1. Optimisation results . . . . .	121
1695	4.3.3.2. Background composition after preselection and BDT . . . . .	124
1696	4.3.4. Background rejection validation . . . . .	125
1697	4.3.4.1. BDT overfitting monitoring . . . . .	125
1698	4.3.4.2. BDT peaking structure monitoring . . . . .	125
1699	4.3.4.3. Data/Simulation comparison in sidebands . . . . .	129
1700	4.3.5. Expected background yield . . . . .	130
1701	4.3.5.1. Sidebands method . . . . .	132
1702	4.3.5.2. Relaxed LID sidebands method . . . . .	132
1703	4.3.5.3. Data driven ABCD method . . . . .	134
1704		

## 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.1. Untagged analysis strategy

1705	4.3.5.4. Final background yield . . . . .	135
1706	4.4. Study of the systematics uncertainties . . . . .	137
1707	4.4.1. Uncertainty on signal efficiency . . . . .	137
1708	4.4.1.1. Particle identification efficiency and misidentification	
1709	probability . . . . .	138
1710	4.4.1.2. Trigger efficiency . . . . .	138
1711	4.4.1.3. Tracking efficiency . . . . .	139
1712	4.4.2. Uncertainty on the expected background yield . . . . .	141
1713	4.4.2.1. Track momentum scale . . . . .	141
1714	4.4.2.2. Extraction method . . . . .	142
1715	4.4.3. Other sources . . . . .	142
1716	4.4.4. Systematics uncertainties summary . . . . .	142
1717	4.5. Branching fraction upper-limit estimation . . . . .	143
1718	4.5.1. $CL_s$ method . . . . .	143
1719	4.5.2. Statistical uncertainties . . . . .	143
1720	4.5.3. Upper limit results . . . . .	144

1721 According to the Standard Model, lepton flavour conservation happens accidentally.  
 1722 However, the discovery of neutrino oscillations shows that there is a direct violation  
 1723 of neutrino flavour and also a charged-lepton flavour violation through the charged  
 1724 currents of weak interaction. Decays that involve **Lepton Flavour Violation (LFV)** are  
 1725 estimated to occur at exceedingly low rates of  $10^{-50}$  [2], making them impossible to  
 1726 detect experimentally. If **LFV** decays were observed, it would provide solid proof of  
 1727 non-SM physics. In this chapter, we will detail the method to search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$   
 1728 **LFV** decays at Belle II using the  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  of collected data [80].

### 1729 4.1. Untagged analysis strategy

1730 The commonly adopted method to search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^- \ell^+ \ell^-$  decays in B-factories  
 1731 rely on the reconstruction of both  $\tau$  leptons produced by the  $e^+ e^-$  collisions [8, 7,  
 1732 30]. The signal  $\tau_{sig}$  is reconstructed as the searched decay  $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^- \ell^+ \ell^-$ , which is  
 1733 a 3-prong decay<sup>2</sup>, while the other tau, called tag, is reconstructed from a **Standard**  
 1734 **Model (SM)** decay. The most used tag decays are:

- 1735 •  $\tau^- \rightarrow e^- \bar{\nu}_e \nu_\tau$ ,
- 1736 •  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \bar{\nu}_\mu \nu_\tau$ ,
- 1737 •  $\tau^- \rightarrow \pi^- \nu_\tau$ ,
- 1738 •  $\tau^- \rightarrow \pi^- \pi^0 \nu_\tau$ , where the  $\pi^0$  is usually not explicitly reconstructed.

1739 These four 1-prong decays cover about 85% of all  $\tau$  decays. The so-called 3x1 recon-  
 1740 struction is usually accompanied by a requirement for the total number of tracks in

---

1.  $\ell$  could be either an electron  $e^-$  or a muon  $\mu^-$ .  
 2. Prong refers to the number of charged tracks in the final state.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.1. Untagged analysis strategy

1741 the event to be exactly four. The  $3 \times 1$ -prong topology reconstruction has an efficiency  
 1742 limited by the tag side branching fractions and the requirement of having 4 tracks only  
 in the event.

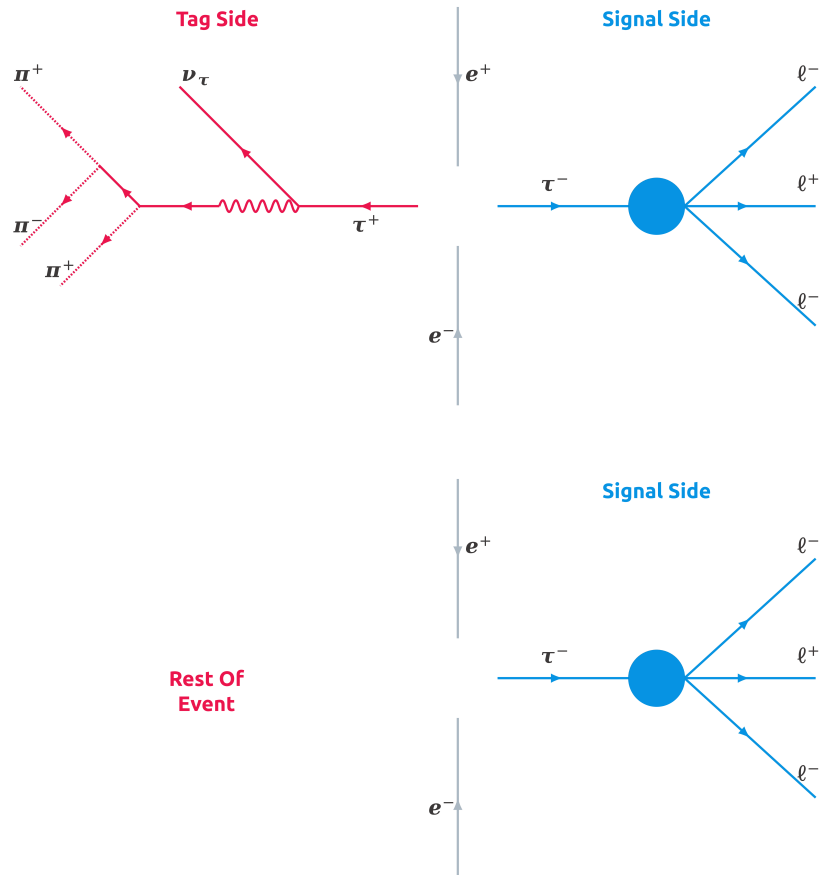


Figure 4.1. – Diagrams of the  $e^+e^- \rightarrow \tau^+\tau^-$  events reconstruction for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^- \ell^+ \ell^-$  LFV decays in  $3 \times 3$ -topology (up) and inclusive (down).

1743

1744 The idea described in this Section is to perform an inclusive (or *untagged*) recon-  
 1745 struction, as was done already for the search for the  $\tau \rightarrow \ell\phi$  at Belle II [17]. The signal  
 1746  $\tau$  is reconstructed into three muons, and all the other tracks and clusters are used  
 1747 to form a **Rest-of-Event (ROE)**, as illustrated in Figure 4.1. An additional selection  
 1748 (or *mask*) is applied to clean the ROE from background tracks and clusters. With the  
 1749 inclusive method, the reconstruction doesn't only target the 1-prong decays of the  $\tau^-$   
 1750 tag, but also the 3-prong ones, which represent about 15% of the total  $\tau^-$  decays. This  
 1751 method also selects events with an odd number of tracks, which can happen if the tag  
 1752 side is not fully reconstructed or in case of additional fake (beam background) tracks,  
 1753 as illustrated in Figure 4.2 where the good tracks are defined as tracks with impact  
 1754 parameters  $|dz| < 3\text{ cm}$  and  $|dr| < 1\text{ cm}$ . The downside of the inclusive method is to  
 1755 enlarge the number of reconstructed background events.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.1. Untagged analysis strategy

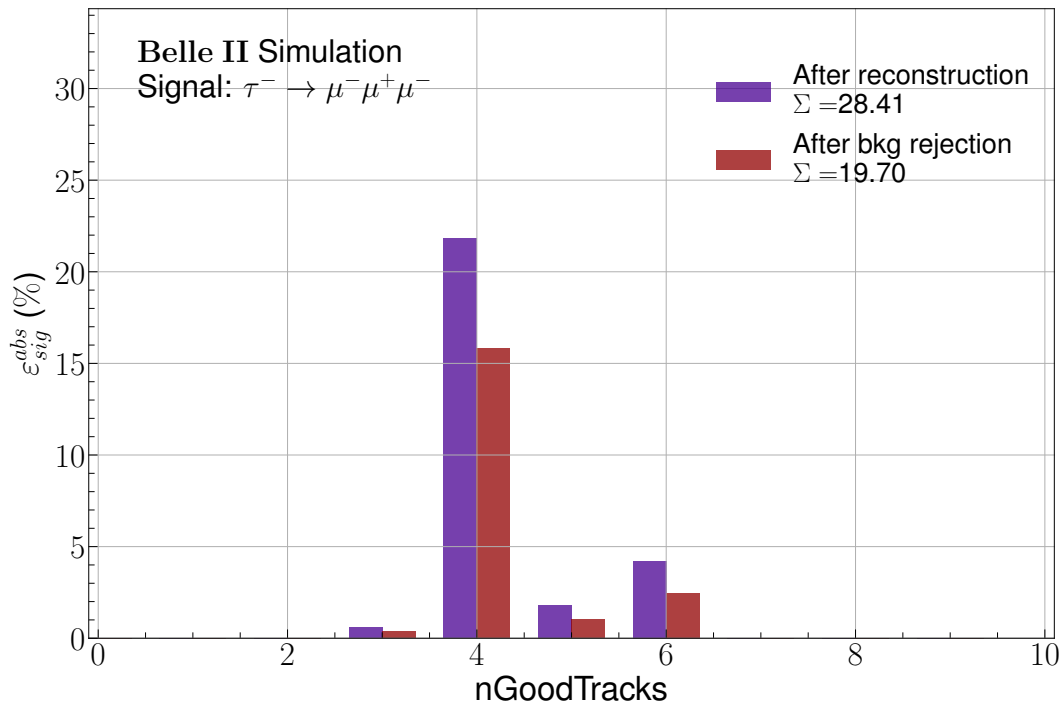


Figure 4.2. – Distribution of the number of good tracks (are defined as tracks with impact parameters  $|dz| < 3 \text{ cm}$  and  $|dr| < 1 \text{ cm}$ ) per event after the inclusive reconstruction (purple) and background rejection (red). The total absolute signal efficiency is 28.41% after the reconstruction and 19.70% after the background rejection.



#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.1. Untagged analysis strategy

Like the other  $\tau$ -LFV studies performed by B-factories, the signal and background yields are evaluated in the 2D plane formed by the reconstructed mass of the signal  $\tau$ , and the energy difference between the three leptons and the beam energy in the centre of mass system:

$$M_{3\mu} = \sqrt{E_{3\mu}^2 - P_{3\mu}^2}, \quad (4.1)$$

$$\Delta E_{3\mu} = E_{3\mu}^{CM} - E_{beam}^{CM} = E_{3\mu}^{CM} - \frac{\sqrt{s}}{2}, \quad (4.2)$$

1756 where  $E_{3\mu}$  and  $P_{3\mu}$  are the sum of the energies and the summed momenta's magnitude  
 1757 of the three leptons. For signal, it is expected that these quantities peaks at  $M_{3\mu} \sim m_\tau =$   
 1758  $1776.86 \pm 0.12 \text{ MeV}$  [13] and  $\Delta E_{3\mu} \sim 0 \text{ GeV}$  due to the final state without neutrinos. On  
 1759 the contrary, background events are smoothly distributed without peaking structures.  
 1760 Different regions of the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  plane are defined according to the resolution of  
 1761 these variables. The regions are either used to optimize the background rejection,  
 1762 evaluate the number of expected background events, or search for the signal. The  
 1763 signal region is kept hidden until the analysis is finalized in order to avoid potential  
 1764 experimenters' bias.

The procedure to suppress the background is divided into two steps, as detailed in Section 4.3, optimised to give the highest Punzi figure of merit [19]:

$$FOM = \frac{\varepsilon_{sig}}{a/2 + \sqrt{b}}, \quad (4.3)$$

1765 where  $\varepsilon_{sig}$  is the absolute signal efficiency,  $b$  the number of background events, and  
 1766  $a = 1.28$  is the desired 90% confidence level. Firstly, a set of cut-based preselections is  
 1767 designed to limit contamination by the low-multiplicity background, followed by a  
 1768 k-folded **Boosted Decision Tree (BDT)**, which targets  $\tau^+ \tau^-$  and  $q\bar{q}$  backgrounds.

Finally, sources of systematic uncertainties are identified and evaluated in Section 4.4, before computing the branching fraction's upper limit at 90% **Confidence Level (CL)**:

$$\mathcal{B}_{UL}^{90} = \frac{s^{90}}{2 \times L \times \sigma_{\tau^+ \tau^-} \times \varepsilon_{\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-}}, \quad (4.4)$$

1769 where  $s^{90}$  is the upper limit on the signal yield,  $L = \int \mathcal{L} dt = 424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  the integrated  
 1770 luminosity of the LS1 dataset,  $\sigma_{\tau^+ \tau^-}$  the  $\tau^+ \tau^-$  production cross-section measured as  
 1771  $0.919 \pm 0.003 \text{ nb}$  and  $\varepsilon_{\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-}$  the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  signal efficiency. The computation  
 1772 of the upper limit is based on the  $CL_s$  method [113, 23] described in Section 4.5.

1773 The data and **Monte-Carlo (MC)** simulated datasets used in this analysis are de-  
 1774 scribed in Chapter 2. Since they correspond to the  $\Upsilon(4S)$  energy, the analysis is  
 1775 optimised for  $L = 362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ , and the  $\Upsilon(5S)$  and off-resonance data are added at the end  
 1776 of the study.

## 1777 4.2. Event reconstruction

### 1778 4.2.1. Particle lists

1779 In this study, the muon candidates are first combined to form a  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decay  
 1780 candidate. The event shape and the kinematic calculators use the list of photons and  
 1781 charged particles with an assumed pion mass. Finally, the rest of the event is built  
 1782 from all the photons and charged particles which are not used in the reconstruction of  
 1783 the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decay chain. Pions are also used to reconstruct the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \pi^- \pi^+ \pi^- \nu_\tau$   
 1784 control sample. The charged and neutral particle definitions are given in the following.

#### 1785 4.2.1.1. Charged particle lists requirements

1786 The muons and pions lists are reconstructed as charged tracks coming from the  
 1787 [Interaction Point \(IP\)](#), with the transverse ( $dr$ ) and longitudinal ( $dz$ ) projections of  
 1788 their point of closest approach smaller than 1 cm and 3 cm, respectively [114]. Muons  
 1789 are identified by exploiting the likelihood-based muon identification variables. The  
 1790 particle [IDentification \(ID\)](#) requirements are loose and tuned at a later stage. [Lepton](#)  
 1791 [IDentification \(LID\)](#) corrections provided by the performance group are applied to the  
 1792 simulation. No particle [ID](#) requirement is applied to the pion list in order to use all  
 1793 particles coming from the [IP](#) to build the event shape and kinematics, as described  
 later. All selections on charged-particle candidates are summarized in [Table 4.1](#).

Table 4.1. – Selection criteria for charged particle lists.

Variable	Requirement		
	$\mu^-$	$\pi^-$	$\pi^-$ control sample
$ dz $ (cm)	<3	<3	<3
$ dr $ (cm)	<1	<1	<1
<i>muonID</i>	> 0.5	-	< 0.5
<i>electronID</i> <sup>BDT</sup>	-	-	< 0.5
<i>pionID</i>	-	-	-

1794

#### 1795 4.2.1.2. Photon and neutral particle lists requirements

1796 The photon lists are filled with the [Electromagnetic CaLorimeter \(ECL\)](#) clusters  
 1797 within the [Central Drift Chamber \(CDC\)](#) acceptance,  $\cos\theta \in [-0.8660, 0.9563]$  and not  
 1798 associated with any charged track, with requirements on the distance between clusters  
 1799 and tracks, energy and cluster timing. The sum of the weights of all crystals in an [ECL](#)  
 1800 cluster should be larger than 1.5. According to the applied energy selection and their  
 1801 usage in the event reconstruction, two types of photons are defined:

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.2. Event reconstruction

- 1802 1. Photons for  $\pi^0$  candidate reconstruction. Candidates  $\pi^0$  are made by combining  
1803 two photons with an energy greater than 100 MeV passing the invariant mass  
1804 requirement  $0.115 < M_{\gamma\gamma} < 0.152 \text{ GeV}/c^2$ .
- 1805 2. Photons not belonging to the previous category and having an energy of at least  
1806 200 MeV. Those photons are used in the calculators of the event shape and  
1807 kinematics.

##### 1808 4.2.1.3. Event shape and kinematics

1809 The charged pions and photons defined in the lists above are used to build the event  
1810 shape and kinematics variables, such as the visible and missing energy of the event,  
1811 the missing momentum and mass. The visible energy is equal to the sum of the energy  
1812 of every input particle. The missing momentum (energy) is calculated by subtracting  
1813 the sum of the momentum (energy) of all particles in the input from the sum of the  
1814 beam momenta (energy). These quantities are important for background suppression,  
1815 being sensitive to the emission of undetected neutrinos or not.

An additional event shape variable relevant for this analysis is the thrust axis  $\mathbf{n}_T$  [96] which is the vector maximizing the quantity:

$$T = \max_{\mathbf{n}_T} \left( \frac{\sum_i |\mathbf{p}_i \cdot \mathbf{n}_T|}{\sum_i |\mathbf{p}_i|} \right), \quad (4.5)$$

1816 where  $\mathbf{p}_i$  is the momentum vector of the  $i$ -th particle in the final state, either charged  
1817 or neutrals.

##### 1818 4.2.2. Signal reconstruction

1819 In the  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \tau^+ \tau^-$  process,  $\tau^-$  leptons are produced back-to-back in the centre  
1820 of mass frame, so their decay products are well geometrically separated. Thus, we  
1821 combine three muons, requiring that they are in the same hemisphere defined by the  
1822 plane orthogonal to the thrust axis. In addition, a constrain is applied in the 2D plane  
1823 formed by the  $3\mu$  invariant mass and  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ :

- 1824 •  $1.4 < M_{3\mu} < 2.0 \text{ GeV}/c^2$ ,
- 1825 •  $-1.0 < \Delta E_{3\mu} < 0.5 \text{ GeV}$ .

1826 By doing this, it is possible to eliminate background events occurring outside the  
1827 expected peak area. Finally, the signal  $\tau$  vertex is fitted by the *treeFitter* tool [115],  
1828 which updates the momenta and position of the final state particles.

##### 1829 4.2.3. Rest-of-Event building

1830 Only the  $\tau^-$  lepton decaying into the searched LFV channel is reconstructed. As  
1831 described in Section 4.1, our method does not constrain the opposite  $\tau^-$  decay. Instead,  
1832 the rest of all remaining tracks and ECL clusters are gathered in the ROE. The mass of  
1833 the tracks is assigned following the largest particle ID likelihood. The ROE is cleaned

## 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.2. Event reconstruction

1834 from the background by masking tracks and clusters not passing some requirements:  
 1835 tracks are required to lie in the CDC acceptance, have a transverse momentum greater  
 1836 than  $75 \text{ MeV}/c$ ,  $|dz| < 3 \text{ cm}$ , and  $|dr| < 1 \text{ cm}$  [114]. In the photon's case, it is required to  
 1837 be in the CDC acceptance and to have an energy of at least  $200 \text{ MeV}$ .

1838 The ROE properties, such as the mass and the difference of energy with respect to  
 1839 beam one, are stored in variables which are used for background suppression.

### 1840 4.2.4. Additional requirements

#### 1841 4.2.4.1. Signal region

1842 For the signal LFV decay, the  $M_{3\mu}$  and  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  variables are peaking thanks to the  
 1843 absence of neutrinos in the final state. The resolution of these variables called  $\delta$ , is  
 1844 extracted by an unbinned fit, with RooFit library [116], using an asymmetric Gaussian  
 1845 probability density function, as seen in Figure 4.3. The fit is performed in a limited  
 1846 range to only take into account the signal peak. From the fit are extracted the mean  
 and the up and down resolutions  $\delta^{up(down)}$ , which are reported in Table 4.2.

Table 4.2. – Fitted resolution for  $M_{3\mu}$  and  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  used as units to define signal regions.

Mode	Variable	Mean $\bar{\mu}$	Down Resolution $\delta^{down}$	Up Resolution $\delta^{up}$
$\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$	$M_{3\mu} (\text{MeV}/c^2)$	$1777.35 \pm 0.07$	$4.80 \pm 0.07$	$4.44 \pm 0.06$
	$\Delta E_{3\mu} (\text{MeV})$	$0.7 \pm 0.3$	$14.9 \pm 0.3$	$10.0 \pm 0.5$

1847

The  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  two-dimensional plane is subdivided into different regions with sizes and shapes based on the parameters extracted from the one-dimensional distributions. Two shapes can be used. The first one is the asymmetric rectangular boxes centred around the fitted means  $\bar{\mu}$  and with semi-axis based on multiples  $n$  of the resolutions  $\delta_{up(down)}$  such as:

$$\bar{\mu}_M - n \times \delta_M^{down} < M_{3\mu} < \bar{\mu}_M + n \times \delta_M^{up}, \quad (4.6)$$

$$\bar{\mu}_{\Delta E} - n \times \delta_{\Delta E}^{down} < \Delta E_{3\mu} < \bar{\mu}_{\Delta E} + n \times \delta_{\Delta E}^{up}. \quad (4.7)$$

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.2. Event reconstruction

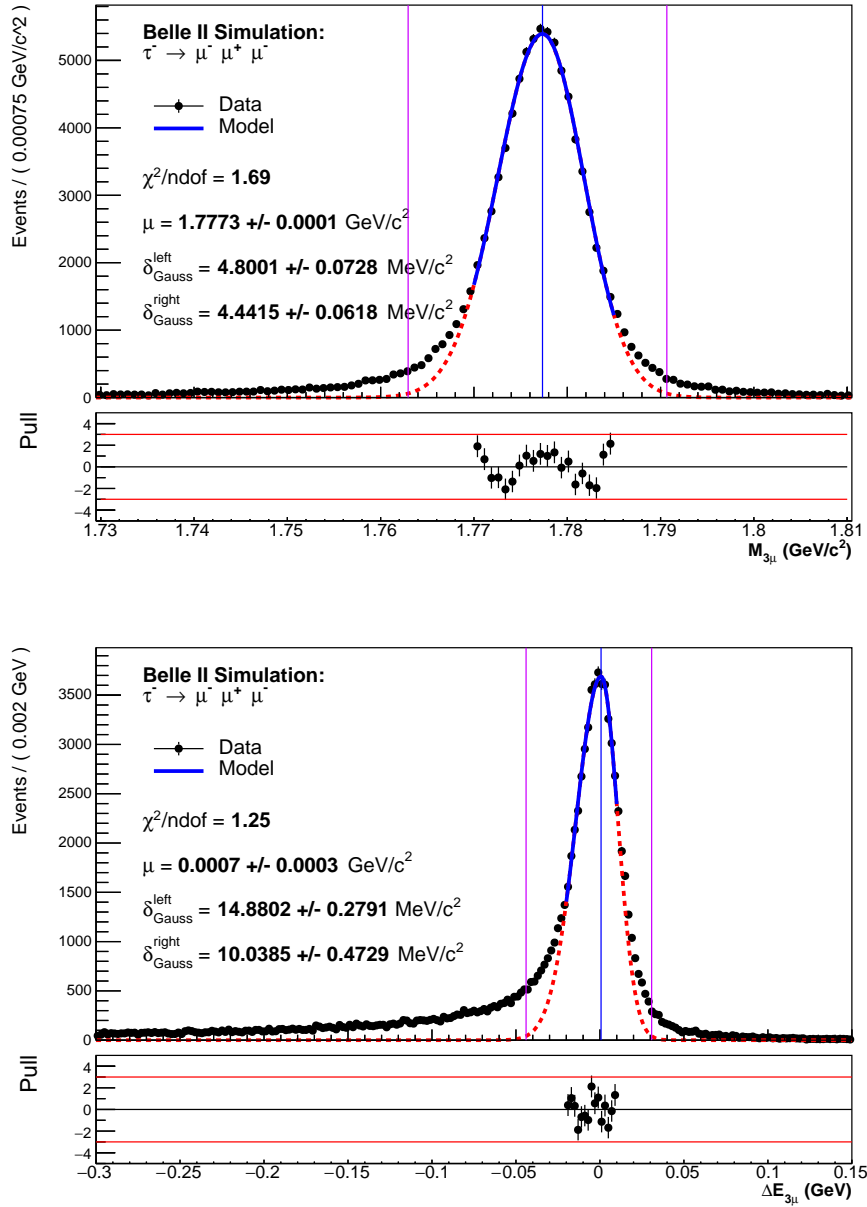


Figure 4.3. – Fits of the  $M_{3\mu}$  (top) and  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  (bottom) distributions using signal simulation. The fit curve is represented with a solid line. The vertical magenta lines represent the  $3\delta$  region.

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.2. Event reconstruction

The second type of region is the asymmetric ellipse, such as:

$$\left\{ \begin{array}{ll} \frac{x^2}{(n \times \delta_M^{down})^2} + \frac{y^2}{(n \times \delta_{\Delta E}^{down})^2} \leq 1 & \text{if } M \leq \bar{\mu}_M \text{ and } \Delta E \leq \bar{\mu}_{\Delta E} \\ \frac{x^2}{(n \times \delta_M^{up})^2} + \frac{y^2}{(n \times \delta_{\Delta E}^{up})^2} \leq 1 & \text{if } M > \bar{\mu}_M \text{ and } \Delta E > \bar{\mu}_{\Delta E} \\ \frac{x^2}{(n \times \delta_M^{up})^2} + \frac{y^2}{(n \times \delta_{\Delta E}^{down})^2} \leq 1 & \text{if } M \leq \bar{\mu}_M \text{ and } \Delta E > \bar{\mu}_{\Delta E} \\ \frac{x^2}{(n \times \delta_M^{down})^2} + \frac{y^2}{(n \times \delta_{\Delta E}^{up})^2} \leq 1 & \text{if } M > \bar{\mu}_M \text{ and } \Delta E \leq \bar{\mu}_{\Delta E} \end{array} \right. \quad (4.8)$$

with:

$$\begin{aligned} x &= (\Delta E_{3\mu} - \bar{\mu}_{\Delta E}) \times \cos(\theta) - (M_{3\mu} - \bar{\mu}_M) \times \sin(\theta), \\ y &= (\Delta E_{3\mu} - \bar{\mu}_{\Delta E}) \times \sin(\theta) + (M_{3\mu} - \bar{\mu}_M) \times \cos(\theta), \end{aligned} \quad (4.9)$$

1848 where  $\theta$  is the correlation angle between  $M_{3\mu}$  and  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  extracted by a linear fit of  $M_{3\mu}$   
1849 profile plot as function of  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ , see Figure 4.4.

1850 When optimising background suppression, a  $\pm 20\delta$  wide rectangular area is used,  
1851 while the events outside this box are rejected. This keeps enough background events to  
1852 perform the BDT's training. However, to optimize the requirement on the BDT output,  
1853 the region is restricted to a  $\pm 5\delta$  wide asymmetric box. The final yield extraction is  
1854 performed on the best-performing region between  $\pm 3\delta$  asymmetric rectangular and  
1855 elliptic **Signal Region (SR)**, as explained in Section 4.3.3. The  $5\delta$  rectangular region is  
1856 kept hidden in the data, and the selection validation is performed in the **Side Bands**  
1857 **(SB)** defined as the area covering  $\pm 20\delta_M$ ,  $\pm 10\delta_{\Delta E}$  while hiding the  $\pm 5\delta$  wide box. All  
1858 of these regions are represented in Figure 4.5.

#### 1859 4.2.4.2. Trigger lines and skimming

1860 The trigger lines considered for this study are the low multiplicity (lml) lines, the hie  
1861 line and the lines based on the CDC (fff, ffo, fyo and ffy). The signal efficiency, on top  
1862 of reconstruction, for the different lines based on the simulation **Trigger SIMulation**  
1863 **(TSIM)** is shown in Figure 4.6. The most important ones for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  are the  
1864 ffy, fyo, hie, lml10 and lml12, but we decided to use in addition lml 6,7,8,9 to maximize  
1865 the efficiency. The definition of those trigger lines is described in Appendix B. The  
1866 others are discarded since they have been prescaled at some point during the data  
1867 taking, and their simulated efficiency is difficult to determine. The overall trigger  
1868 efficiency for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  is about 95% on reconstructed signal candidates.

1869 The events are required to pass the  $\tau$ -LFV skim defined in Section 2.7.1.

#### 1870 4.2.4.3. Signal truth matching

1871 In order to ensure the correctness of the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  reconstruction for the signal  
1872 sample, a set of requirements based on MC information is applied ashing:

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.2. Event reconstruction

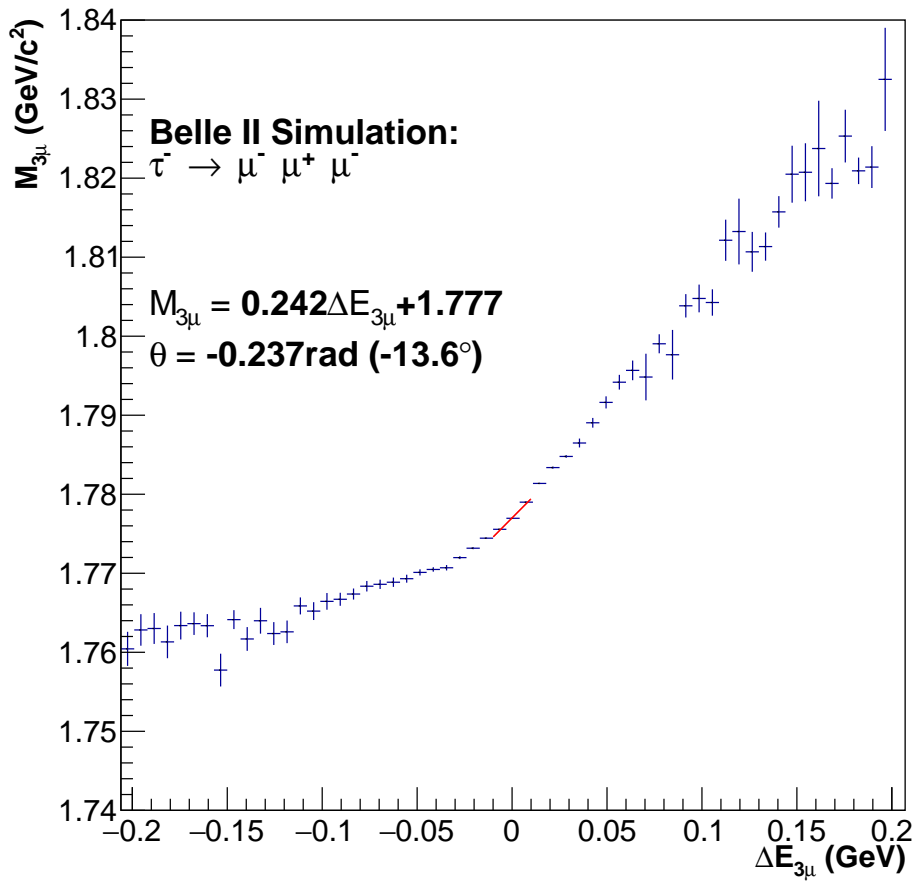


Figure 4.4. – Profile plots of the  $M_{3\mu}$  vs  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  final state for signal MC events. The correlation angle between signal region variables is extracted with a linear fit around  $\Delta E = 0$  GeV where the signal is peaking.

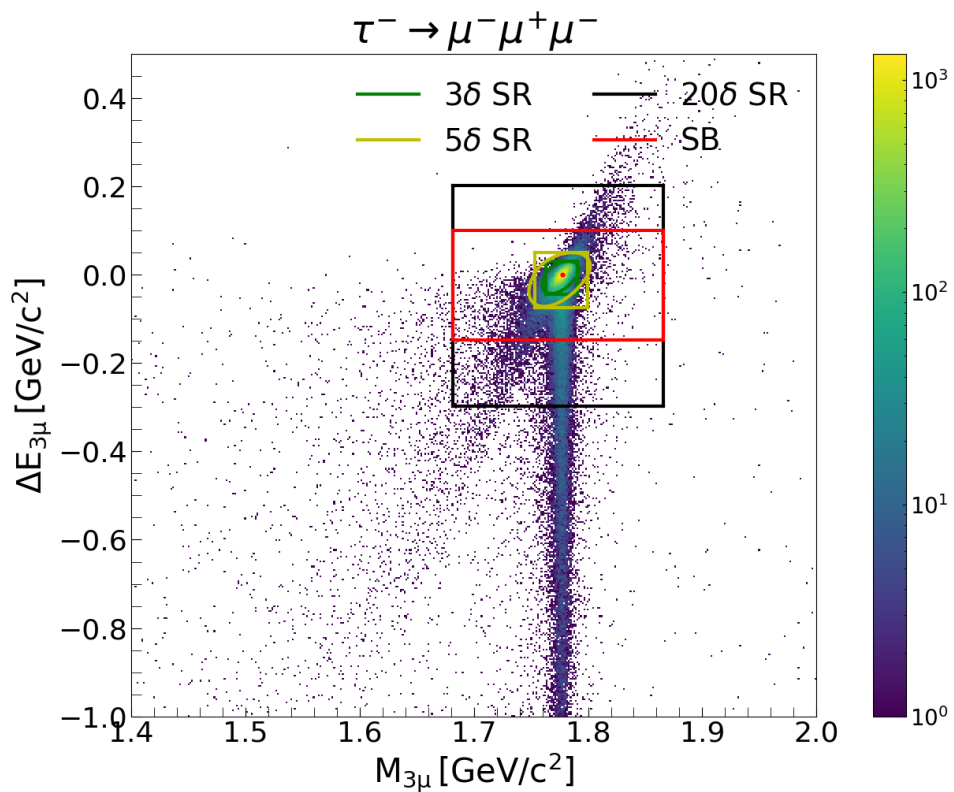


Figure 4.5. – Distributions of  $\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\mu$  simulated signal events in the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  plane. The edges of the  $\pm 3, \pm 5$  and  $\pm 20\delta$  regions defined from the previous fits are marked as green, yellow and black rectangles, respectively. The red rectangle represents the sidebands region,  $\pm 20\delta$  in  $M_{3\mu}$  and  $\pm 10\delta$  in  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ . The corresponding elliptical regions are also shown.



4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.2. Event reconstruction

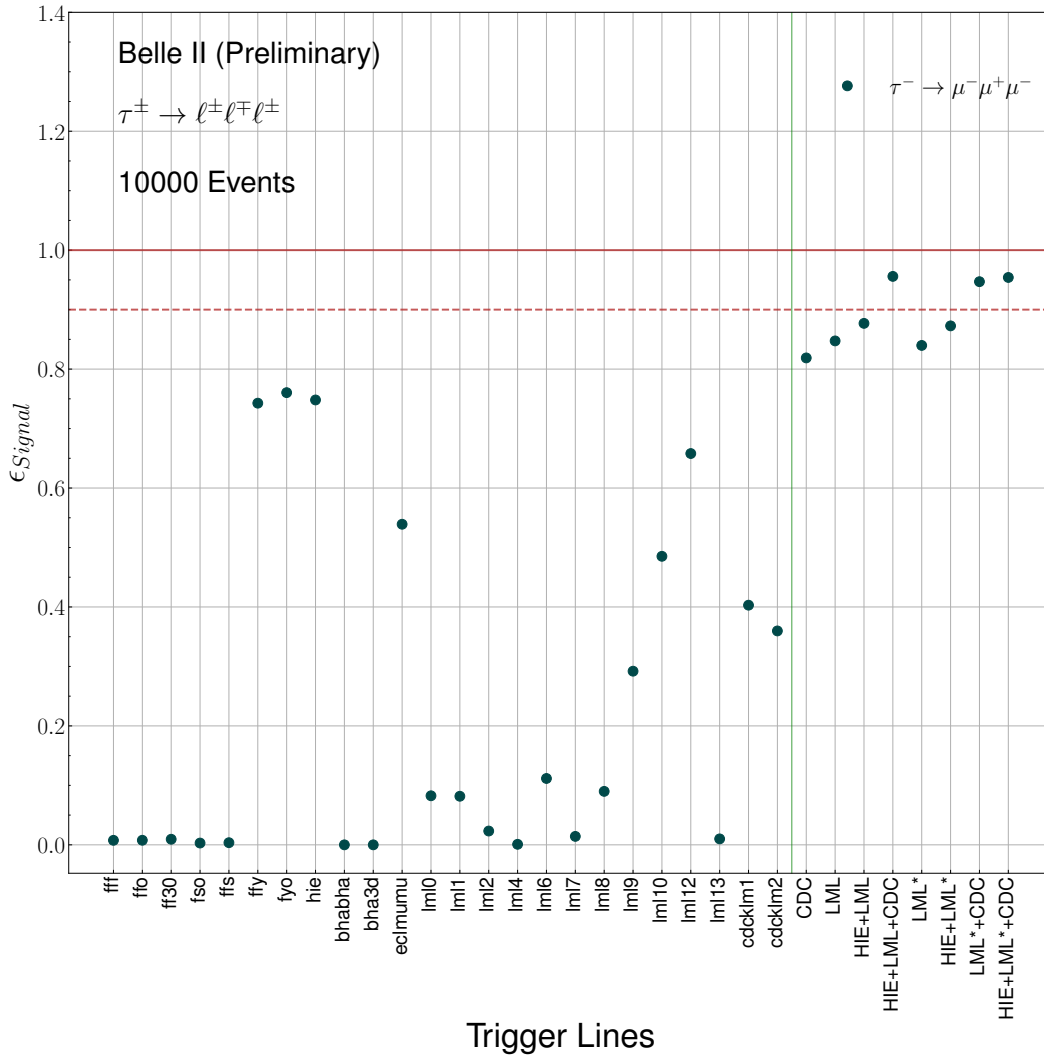


Figure 4.6. – Trigger efficiency obtained from simulation for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decays. The combination of trigger lines CDC, LML (LML\*) and HIE are respectively fyo/ffy, lm10/1/2/4/6/7/8/9/10/12/13 (lm16/7/8/9/10/12) and hie.

## 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

- 1873 • at least one of the two  $\tau$  decay in a 3 prong final state
- 1874 • the three muons have a  $\tau$  in their ancestors,
- 1875 • the three muons are correctly identified.

1876 This requirement on simulated signal sample is important for background suppression  
 1877 optimization, where signal and background candidates must be well identified.

### 1878 4.2.5. Signal efficiency and background composition

1879 The signal efficiency at the different reconstruction steps defined previously, as well  
 as the expected background yields, are given in Table 4.3.

Table 4.3. – Relative and absolute signal efficiencies and number of background events retained after the reconstruction and after each offline requirements step for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  in the two simulated samples of  $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  each, called train and test. The yields are normalized to  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ .  $N_{bkg}$  is the sum of the individual background components.

		$\epsilon_{sig}^{rel}$	$\epsilon_{sig}^{abs}$	$N_{bkg}$	$N_{\tau\tau}$	$N_{q\bar{q}}$	$N_{B\bar{B}}$	$N_{lowm}$
Reconstruction	train	46.39%	46.39%	30157.59	1439.31	20569.29	422.09	7726.89
	test	46.48%	46.48%	30483.66	1452.89	20864.05	440.92	7725.80
TruthMatch	train	99.79%	46.30%	30157.59	1439.31	20569.29	422.09	7726.89
	test	99.78%	46.38%	30483.66	1452.89	20864.05	440.92	7725.80
21 $\delta$ SR box	train	88.47%	40.96%	2220.60	14.03	953.69	0.72	1252.16
	test	88.49%	41.04%	2225.49	13.39	965.73	1.45	1244.92
Trigger	train	94.57%	38.74%	1994.35	9.86	922.01	0.72	1061.75
	test	94.57%	38.81%	2013.99	8.51	936.49	1.45	1067.54
TauLFV Skim	train	98.56%	38.18%	1994.35	9.86	922.01	0.72	1061.75
	test	98.55%	38.25%	2013.99	8.51	936.49	1.45	1067.54
LID correction for 0.5 cut	train	89.85%	34.30%	1803.70	7.98	830.10	0.70	964.92
	test	89.81%	34.35%	1819.67	6.15	842.73	1.23	969.56

1880

## 1881 4.3. Background suppression

1882 The background suppression is a two-level strategy, with the first level aiming to  
 1883 remove low multiplicity backgrounds using a cut-based selection, followed by a second  
 1884 level aiming to remove primary background components  $q\bar{q}$  with a [BDT](#) classifier.

### 1885 4.3.1. Cut-based preselection

1886 The loose lepton identification requirement applied at the reconstruction stage  
 1887 leads to a high background contamination in the  $\pm 20\delta$  [SR](#). The first step of background

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

1888 suppression is thus to refine the **LID** selection to maintain high signal efficiency and  
 1889 reduce background. The performance group only provides simulation corrections for  
 1890 a few threshold values (0.5, 0.9, 0.95, 0.99), hence we are restricted to those thresholds.  
 1891 Cutting at a value of 0.95 for the three muons would result in a too-low signal efficiency  
 1892 (about 68%) while still retaining 24% of the background.

The low muon identification efficiency is mainly caused by slow muons that cannot reach the  **$K_L$  and Muon detector (KLM)**. The idea to improve the muonID selection is first to rank the **LID** of the three muons. The resulting distributions are shown in Figure 4.7. The main efficiency loss comes from the muon with the lowest **LID** value. By making a selection on the first two muons only:

$$\mu ID_{lead} > 0.95, \quad (4.10)$$

$$\mu ID_{sub} > 0.95, \quad (4.11)$$

$$\mu ID_{third} > 0.5, \quad (4.12)$$

we obtain a relative (absolute) signal efficiency of 97% (32%) with a background efficiency of 61%. These efficiencies are obtained by applying **LID** weights to adjust the simulation distribution and improve the agreement between data and simulation. Each muon in the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  final state is assigned a weight  $w_{LID,\ell i}$  based on whether it is real or fake (misidentified pion or kaon). The event weight  $w_{LID}$  is given as:

$$w_{LID} = \prod_{i=1}^3 w_{LID,\ell i}. \quad (4.13)$$

1893 Despite the significant degradation of background suppression caused by the loose  
 1894 selection on the third **LID**, the signal retention gain remains commendable. The  
 1895 **BDT**-based background suppression copes with this background increase.

1896 Although the  $\tau^- \tau^+$  and  $q\bar{q}$  backgrounds are accurately simulated, there exist some  
 1897 discrepancies with low multiplicity backgrounds with respect to the data. In particular,  
 1898 certain di-photon backgrounds with energy along the beam direction are not properly  
 1899 simulated, resulting in peaking data at the edges of the polar angle of the missing mo-  
 1900 mentum edges  $\theta_{mis}^{CM}$  and at high thrust axis magnitude (as depicted in Figure 4.9). To  
 1901 eliminate contamination from these backgrounds, we have implemented a selection  
 1902 criterion of  $0.3 < \theta_{mis}^{CM} < 2.7$ .

1903 The **BDT** classifier is designed to reject  $\tau^- \tau^+$  and  $q\bar{q}$  components. Hence, it is  
 1904 crucial to reduce the low-multiplicity backgrounds before training. To reject those  
 1905 low-multiplicity backgrounds, some cut-based preliminary selections are defined.  
 1906 We searched for discriminant variables with peaking low-multiplicity structures as  
 1907 illustrated in Figure 4.8. The selections are determined to eliminate any peaks present  
 1908 in the background distributions.

1909 The discriminating variables are grouped to form several preselection combinations.  
 1910 The signal efficiency and background rejection for each combination are shown in  
 1911 Table 4.4, and detailed background composition is listed in Appendix C. The final  
 1912 set of preselection is chosen to maximise the Punzi figure of merit computed after

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

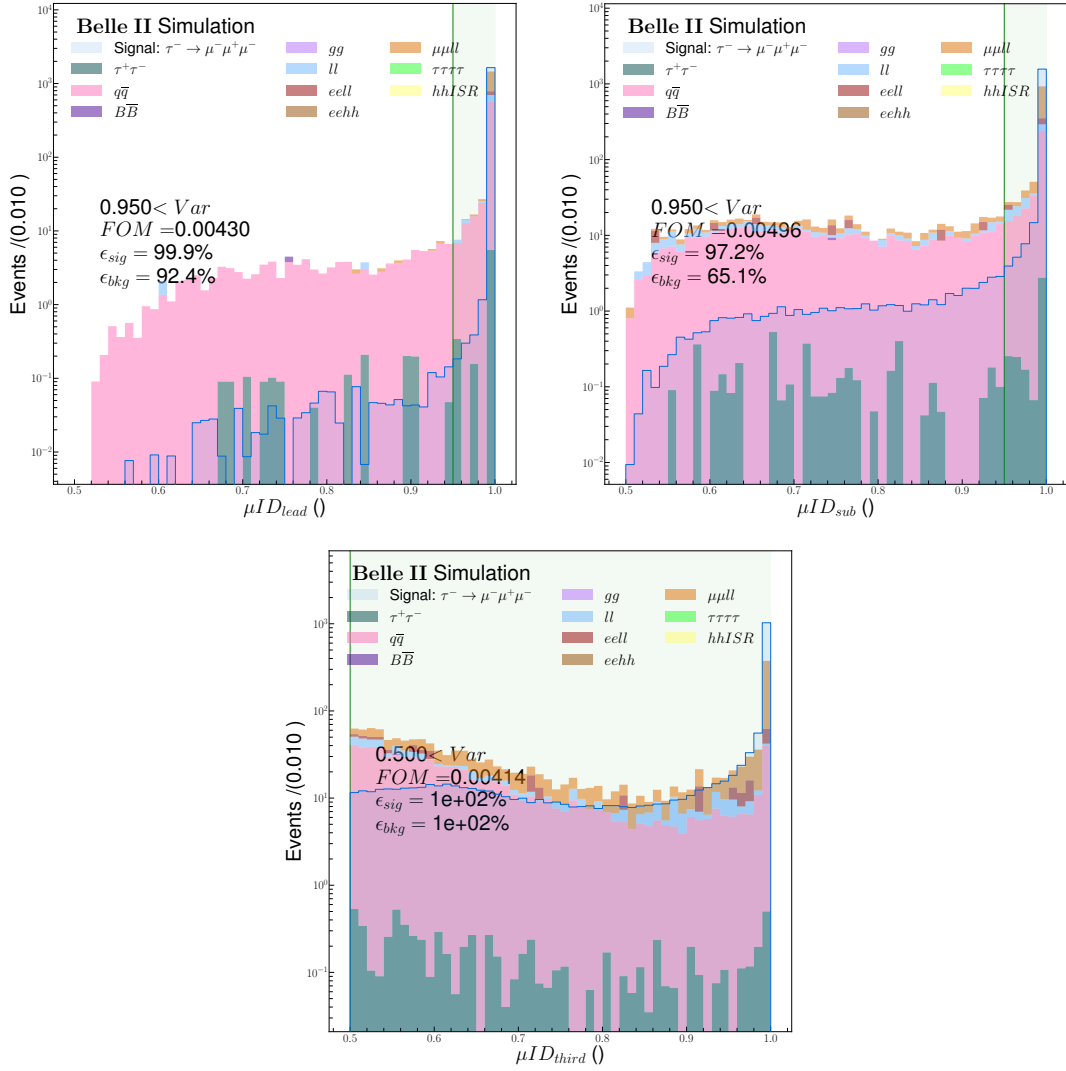


Figure 4.7. – Distributions of the three ranked leptonID in the signal side of the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  MC signal and background sources (left: leading LID, right: subleading LID, bottom: third LID). The green area represents a cut at 0.95.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

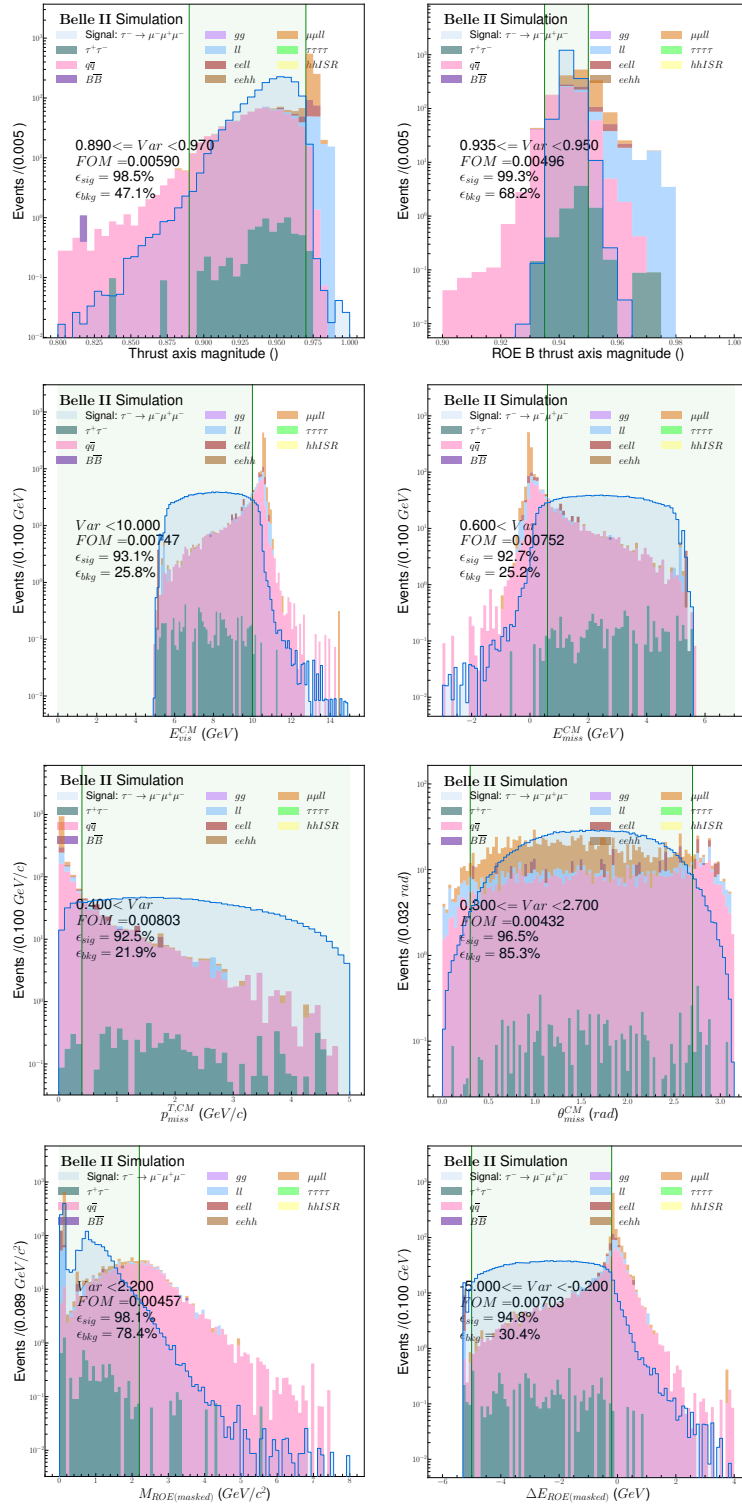


Figure 4.8. – Distribution of the sets of discriminated variables used to define several preliminary selections aiming to remove the low-multiplicity backgrounds. The green area represents the kept region after selection.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

1913 applying the BDT classifier, with the hyper-parameters optimised and trained for a given set of preselection, as discussed in Section 4.3.3.

Table 4.4. – Efficiencies and background yields for several sets of preselection. The number of background events is scaled to  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  retained in the  $20\delta$  region after applying the muonID requirement.

Name	Preselection	$\epsilon_{sig}^{rel}$ (%)	$\epsilon_{sig}^{abs}$ (%)	$\epsilon_{bkg}^{rel}$ (%)	$N_{bkg}$	$N_{\tau\text{-pair}}$	$N_{q\bar{q}}$	$N_{B\bar{B}}$	$N_{lowm}$
Reference	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$	96.88	31.11	89.99	938.82	3.08	287.52	0	648.22
Set 1	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $0.89 < Thrust < 0.97$	95.48	30.67	30.83	321.64	2.96	270.87	0	47.82
Set 2	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $0.935 < Thrust_{\tau ROE}$ $0.95 > Thrust_{\tau ROE}$	96.35	30.94	61.78	644.50	2.58	244.94	0	396.97
Set 3	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $E_{vis}^{CM} < 10.$	90.54	29.08	14.89	155.30	2.98	127.81	0	24.52
Set 4	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $E_{miss}^{CM} > 0.6$	90.22	28.98	14.69	153.29	2.91	125.85	0	24.52
Set 5	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $p_{miss}^{T,CM} > 0.4$	91.12	29.26	15.89	165.74	2.77	135.08	0	27.90
Set 6	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $M_{ROE} < 2.2$ $-5. < \Delta E_{ROE} < -0.2$	90.76	29.15	16.49	172.08	2.62	106.08	0	63.39

1914

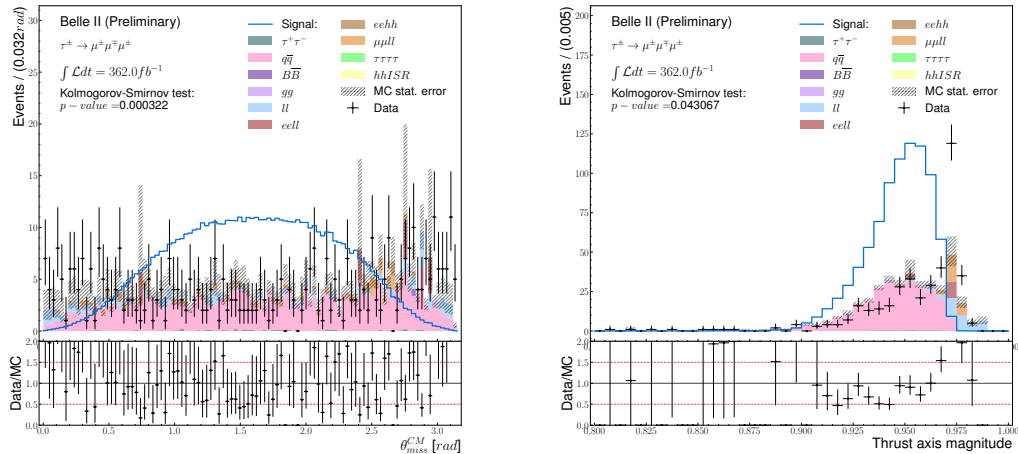


Figure 4.9. – Comparison between the data and simulation for the polar angle of the missing momentum (left) and thrust axis magnitude (right) for events in the sideband region.

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

1915 In addition, in the last preselection combination, we attempted to enhance the  
1916 learning of our [BDT](#) model by applying a preliminary selection on the most [BDT](#)  
1917 effective variables, such as the mass of the [ROE](#)  $M_{ROE}$  and the difference in energy  
1918 between the [ROE](#) and beam  $\Delta E_{ROE}$ . The aim of such pre-selection is to allow the [BDT](#)  
1919 algorithm to learn more about the less-used input variables.

### 1920 4.3.2. Boosted Decision Tree classifier

1921 The [BDT](#) selection aims at removing the remaining background events. It is trained  
1922 on simulated signal sample, with 176,376 events, and background samples made of  
1923  $\tau^- \tau^+$  and  $q\bar{q}$  with respectively 45 and 3,399 events. The [BDT](#) used in this analysis is  
1924 based on the XGBoost library [[18](#), [117](#)].

#### 1925 4.3.2.1. Boosted Decision Tree algorithm

1926 [BDT](#) classifiers [[118](#)] are a type of machine learning algorithm that utilizes multiple  
1927 decision trees to create a highly accurate predictive model. This particular algorithm  
1928 is a form of gradient-boosting, where weaker learners (decision trees) are sequentially  
1929 trained to enhance the overall performance of the model. Boosted decision tree  
1930 classifiers are especially useful for handling complex datasets and generating precise  
1931 predictions. They are commonly applied in a variety of machine-learning tasks, such  
1932 as regression and classification.

1933 The decision trees are an advanced version of the cut-based approach. They use  
1934 a multivariate technique to analyze events meeting specific criteria for either signal  
1935 or background. This is done through a binary tree structure, as shown in [Figure 4.10](#),  
1936 where nodes are split following the sequence:

- 1937 1. The node receives all input variables and events.
- 1938 2. The optimal separation between signal and backgrounds for every variable is  
1939 searched.
- 1940 3. The variable with the highest separation score is retained.
- 1941 4. Events are split into two classes: events fulfilling the selection of the best separa-  
1942 tion variable on one side and events failing it on the other.
- 1943 5. The two classes are sent to two different daughter nodes.

1944 The binary tree is created through a recursive process of splitting nodes using the  
1945 same method. Stopping parameters are introduced to stop the node splitting when  
1946 one of them is satisfied. Nodes at the ends of the tree are called leaves where a weight,  
1947 such as purity  $s/(s+b)$ , is computed to measure the similarity of the events in the leaf  
1948 to the signal.

1949 The boosting consists of combining multiple small decision trees, resulting in a  
1950 stable classifier. This is done by recursively creating decision trees on the residual of  
1951 the previous iteration. For a given event, the prediction for an event  $i$  is expressed as  
1952 the sum of the  $K$  decision tree leaf weights.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

For a dataset  $\mathcal{D} = \{(x_i, y_i)\}$ , where  $x_i$  is the input variables vector and  $y_i$  is the target<sup>3</sup> the decision tree prediction  $\hat{y}_i$  is given by:

$$\hat{y}_i = \sum_{k=1}^K f_k(x_i), \quad (4.14)$$

where each  $f_k$  takes into account the structure of the  $k^{th}$  tree and the leaf weights  $w$ . The training of the boosted decision tree is done by minimizing the objective function:

$$\mathcal{L} = \sum_i l(\hat{y}_i, y_i) + \sum_k \Omega(f_k), \quad (4.15)$$

1953 where  $l(\hat{y}_i, y_i)$  is a loss function that measures the difference between the prediction  
 1954 and the target. In our case, we use a logarithmic loss function.  $\Omega(f_k)$  is a regularisation  
 1955 function that penalises the complexity of the model. In the used XGBoost library, the  
 1956 minimisation of the objective function is done using an extreme gradient boosting  
 1957 algorithm.

3. In our case the target function is  $y_i = 0$  if the event is simulated background and 1 if it is simulated signal

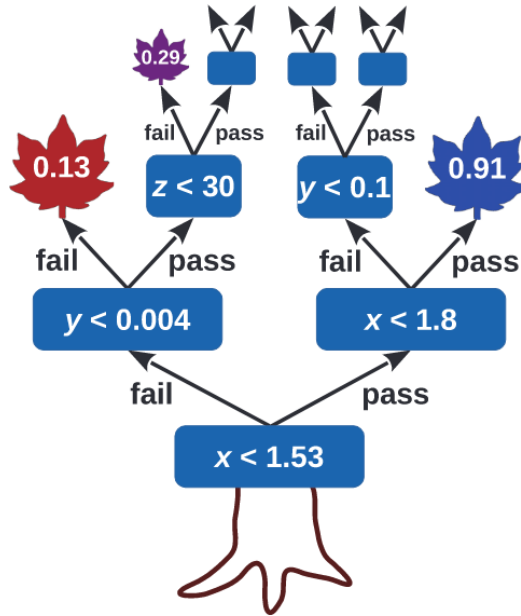


Figure 4.10. – Diagram of a binary decision tree. The blue rectangles represent the internal nodes and their associated splitting selection. The leaves are the terminal nodes and indicate their purity.



1958 **4.3.2.2. k-folding algorithm**

1959 Training a **BDT** for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  channel is a challenge due to the low back-  
 1960 ground level of this channel. To still be able to use a **BDT** classifier in the background  
 1961 rejection strategy despite the low background statistic, we work on two different  
 1962 aspects. The first was to improve the provided simulated background statistic by  
 1963 requiring additional samples with the TauLFV skim applied at the generator level. This  
 1964 increases the statistic from  $1 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  to  $8 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  for the dominant background sources.

1965 In addition to the statistical increase, the **BDT** algorithm was completed by a method  
 1966 to save the statistics during the sample splitting. Indeed, usually, with machine  
 1967 learning methods, a dataset  $\mathcal{L}$  is split into three mutually exclusive subsamples.  
 1968 The first subsample  $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Train}}$  called Train, is used for the **BDT** classifier training. The  
 1969 second  $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Validation}}$ , called Validation, is used to evaluate the performances of the  
 1970 **BDT** and take care of potential overtraining or overfitting. The final sample  $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Test}}$   
 1971 Test is reserved throughout the optimisation procedure to provide a clean subsample  
 1972 to extract the final yields and efficiencies of the signal/background classification. A  
 1973 sufficient statistic is thus needed to have three large enough samples.

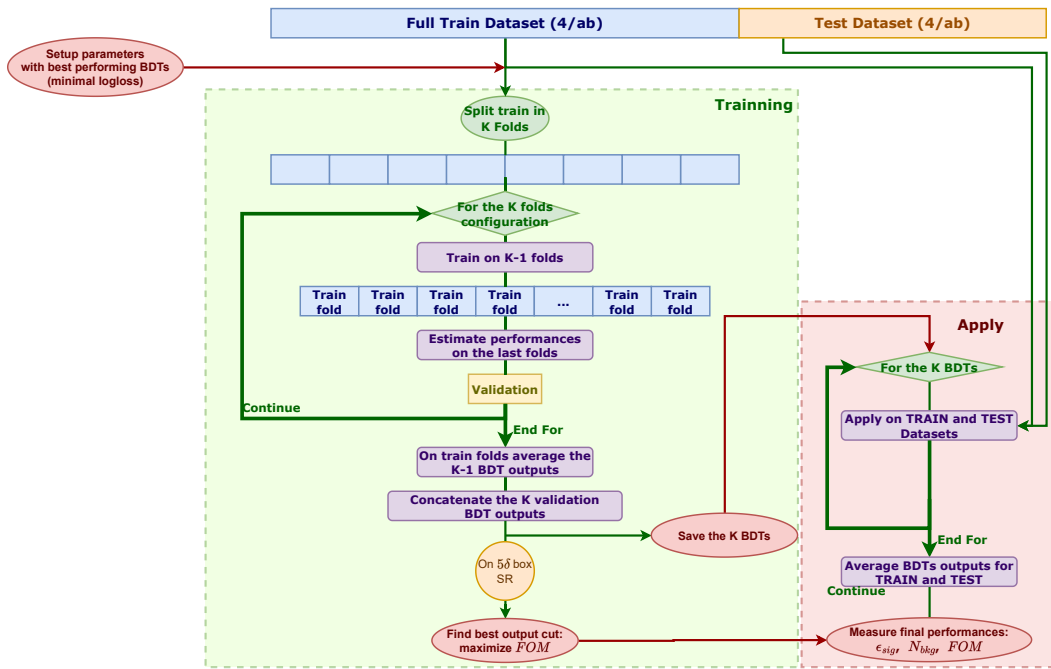


Figure 4.11. – Scheme of the Train sample split into K folds during the training procedure.

1974 In this study, we increase the statistics in the train and test samples by employing the  
 1975 K-Folding algorithm for cross-validation [20]. The k-fold algorithm allows us to use the  
 1976 same sample in both the training and validation phases. In our strategy illustrated in  
 1977 Figure 4.11, the full simulation dataset ( $8 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ ) is split in two: a Train  $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Train}}$  sample  
 1978 of  $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  for the optimisation, the training, and checks the **BDT** performances, and  
 1979 a Test  $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Test}}$  sample of  $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  to extract the final yields. During the optimisation of

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

1980 the **BDT** hyperparameters and the training of the **BDT**, the Train dataset is divided  
1981 into  $K$  equally sized folds  $\mathcal{L}_k$ : so  $\mathcal{L}_{\text{Train}} = \cup_{k=1,K} \mathcal{L}_k$ . The first **BDT** classifier  $T_1$  is  
1982 trained on  $\cup_{k=2,K} \mathcal{L}_k$  while  $\mathcal{L}_1$  is used to validate the classifier  $T_k$ . After training one  
1983 classifier, the roles of the folds are changed, and a new **BDT**  $T_{k'}$  is trained on another  
1984 permutation of  $k - 1$  folds and validated on the remaining  $\mathcal{L}_{k'}$  sample. This procedure  
1985 is repeated until all  $K$  fold combinations are used. It results in  $K$  **BDT** classifiers. Each  
1986 one applied on its independent validation sample in order to have an independent  
1987 dataset. When applying the **BDTs** to the test and data samples, the  $K$  **BDT** outputs  
1988 are averaged since, by definition, those samples were not used in the training. The  
1989 cross-validation allows having a larger training sample since each **BDT** is trained on  
1990  $k - 1$  folds, which minimizes possible overtraining issues. In addition, this also allows  
1991 us to keep a bigger independent test sample. This technique has been used in HEP  
1992 for years, see e.g. [119], and is supported in some machine learning software, such as  
1993 **TMVA**. That is not the case in the **XGBoost** library. We thus had to implement it.

1994 In this study, the **MC** dataset is split into two Train and Test samples with the  
1995 equal statistic of  $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  for the main background contribution. The training sam-  
1996 ple is split into  $K = 10$  folds to perform the cross-validation and  $K = 4$  for the **BDT**  
1997 hyperparameters optimisation.

##### 1998 4.3.2.3. Discriminating variables for the **BDT** classifier

1999 The set of variables and their definitions used as input features for the **BDT** clas-  
2000 sifier are listed in Table 4.5, the **BDT** importance of each input variable is shown in  
2001 Appendix D. A comparison of the signal and background simulated distributions is  
2002 given in Figure 4.3.2.3.

##### 2003 4.3.2.4. **BDT** parameters optimisation

2004 Several hyperparameters are optimised to provide the best separation and avoid  
2005 overfitting from the **BDT** classifier. The python library **Optuna** [21] is used to scan and  
2006 find the best configuration in the hyperparameter space. Two inputs are given to the  
2007 library: an objective function representing the indicator to minimize or maximize  
2008 and a phase space for the hyperparameters, listed in Table 4.6. The sampling of the  
2009 hyperparameters is done with a Tree-structured Parzen Estimator [120] implemented  
2010 in the library, and it provides an efficient independent sampling.

To avoid overfitting, the definition of the objective function is crucial. Here, the  
choice was made to minimize the last iteration of the logarithmic loss function defined  
as:

$$L_{\log}(y, p^{BDT}) = -(y * \log(p^{BDT}) + (1 - y) * (\log(1 - p^{BDT}))), \quad (4.16)$$

2011 where  $y$  is the input target (0 for background and 1 for signal), and  $p^{BDT}$  is the output  
2012 probability of being signal. Doing this minimization in validation folds will automat-  
2013 ically provide a performant separation and avoid overfitting as the logarithmic loss  
2014 function evaluates the goodness of the predicted probability with the target one. The

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

Table 4.5. – List of all the signal/background discriminating variables used as input for BDT classifier algorithm.

Related to	Name	Definition	Unit
Events	$thrust$	Thrust axis magnitude	
	-	Number of good tracks	
	-	Number of good photons	
	$E_\gamma^{CM}$	Sum of all photons energy in the laboratory frame	$GeV$
	$q^\tau \times q^{ROE}$	Product of the total charge of the signal tau side and the ROE side	
	$p_{miss}^{T,CM}$	Transverse momentum in the center-of-mass frame	$GeV/c$
	$\theta_{miss}^{CM}$	Polar angle in the center-of-mass frame	$rad$
	$cos\theta_{miss-li}$	Cosine of the angle between missing momentum and the muon $i$	
	$M_{miss}^2$	Invariant mass squared of the missing momentum	$GeV^2/c^4$
Signal side $\tau$	$t^{\tau-flight} / t_{err}^{\tau-flight}$	$\tau$ flight time normalized by its error	
	$\theta_{\tau-closest}$	Angle between $\tau$ and closest track	
	$cos\theta_{p-vertex}$	Cosine of the angle between the $\tau$ momentum and the direction obtained from its production and decay vertices	
	-	$\chi^2$ probability of $\tau$ vertex fit result	

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

Table 4.5. – List of all the signal/background discriminating variables used as input for BDT classifier algorithm.

Related to	Name	Definition	Unit
Lepton	$\theta_{\ell_i}^{CM}$	Polar angle in the center-of-mass frame	<i>rad</i>
	$E_{\ell_i}^{CM}$	Energy in the center-of-mass frame	<i>GeV</i>
	$p_{lead}^{T,CM}$	Transverse momentum of the leading muons in the centre-of-mass frame	<i>GeV/c</i>
	$p_{sub}^{T,CM}$	Transverse momentum of the second muons in the centre-of-mass frame	<i>GeV/c</i>
	$p_{third}^{T,CM}$	Transverse momentum of the third muons in the centre-of-mass frame	<i>GeV/c</i>
Rest Of Event	$M_{ROE}$	Mass of the ROE	<i>GeV/c<sup>2</sup></i>
	$\Delta E_{ROE}$	Difference between the energy of the ROE and half the centre of mass energy	<i>GeV</i>
	-	Number of electrons in ROE	
	-	Number of muons in ROE	
	-	Number of pions in ROE	
	-	ROE thrust axis magnitude	
	$\cos\theta_{ROE\tau-ROE}^{thrust}$	Cosine of angle between thrust axis of the signal $\tau$ and thrust axis of ROE	
$\cos\theta_{ROE\tau-z}^{thrust}$	Cosine of angle between thrust axis of the signal $\tau$ and $z$ axis		

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

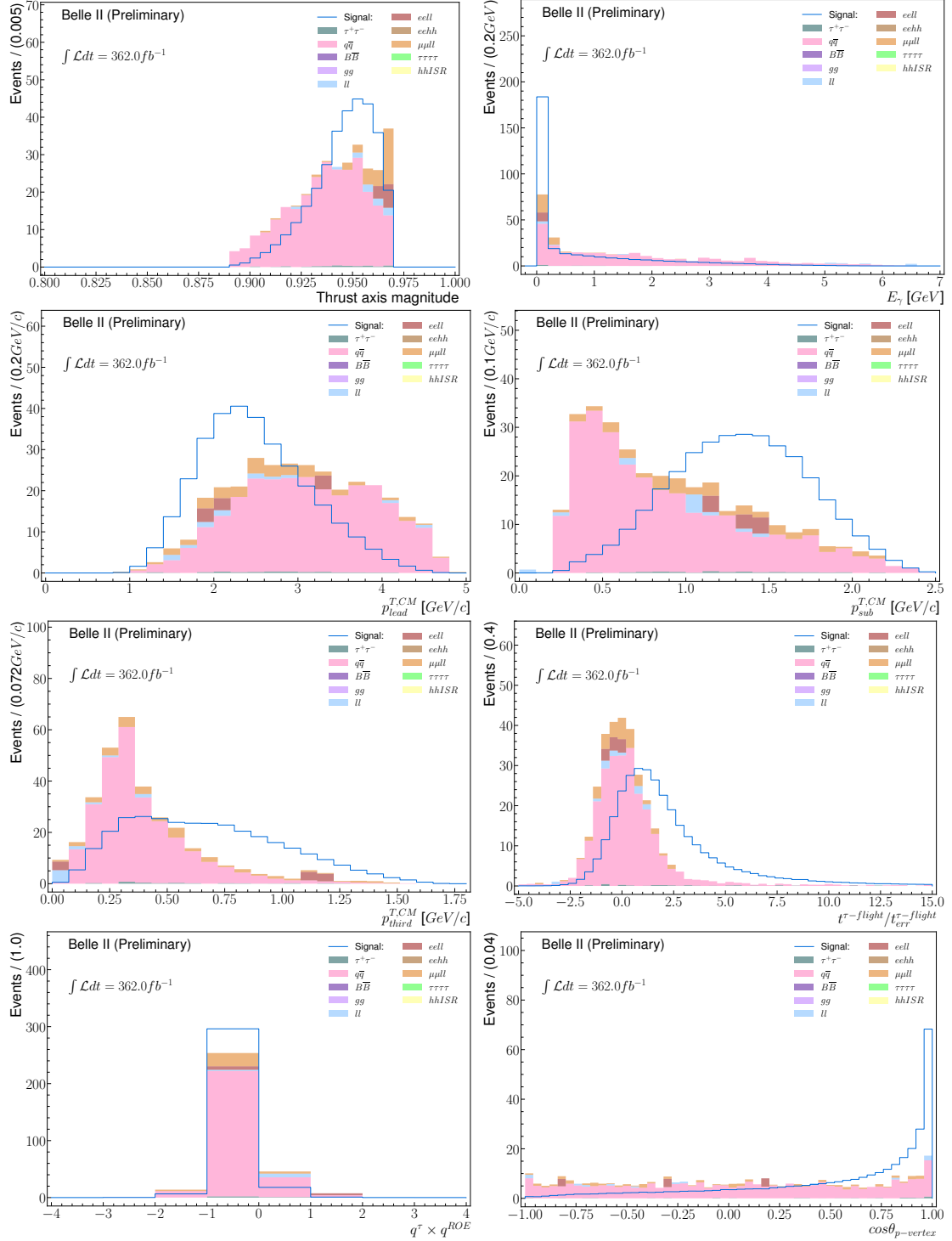


Figure 4.12. – Signal and background comparison in simulation in the  $20\delta$  SR of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for discriminant variables taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

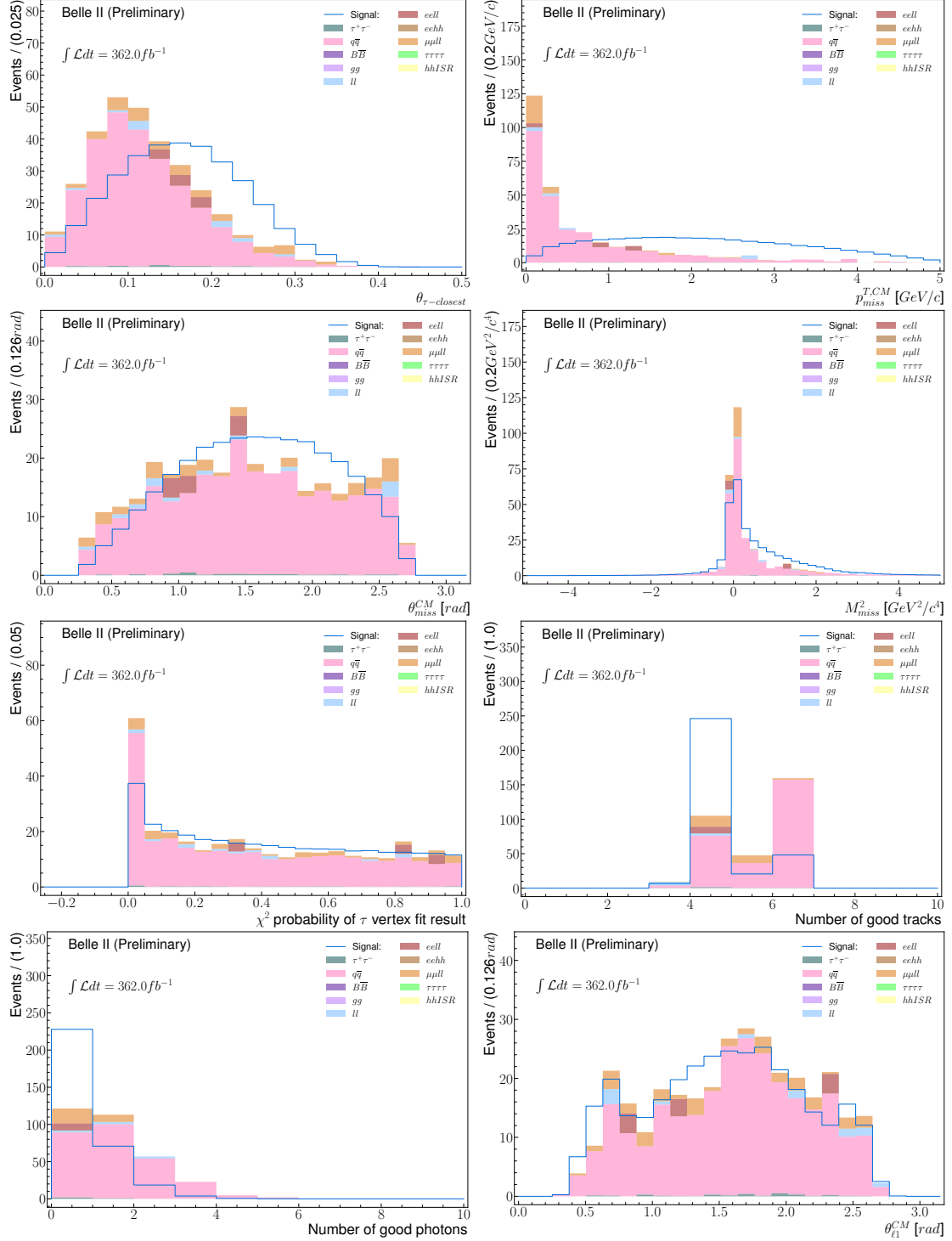


Figure 4.12. – Signal and background comparison in simulation in the  $20\delta$  SR of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for discriminant variables taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

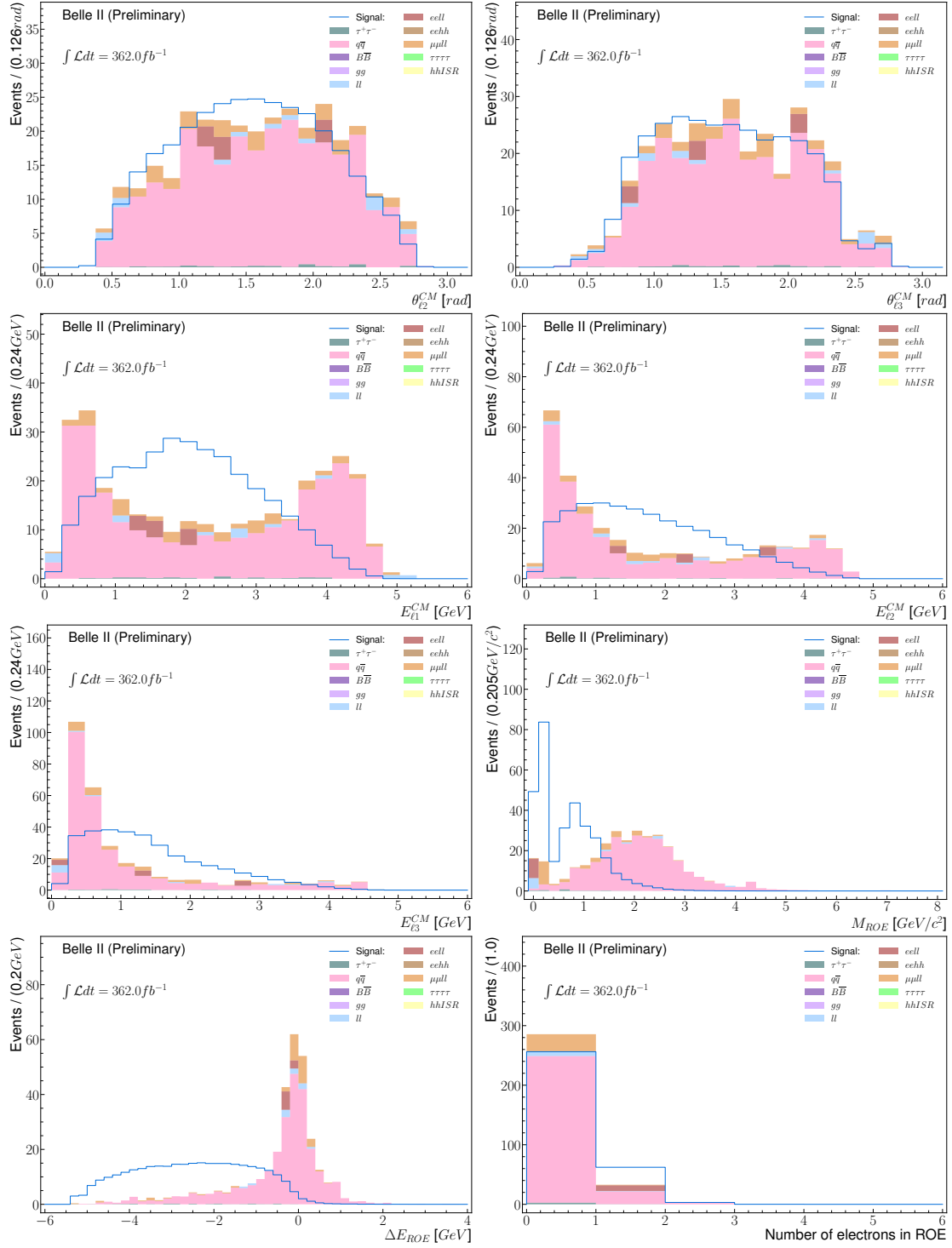


Figure 4.12. – Signal and background comparison in simulation in the  $20\delta$  SR of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for discriminant variables taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

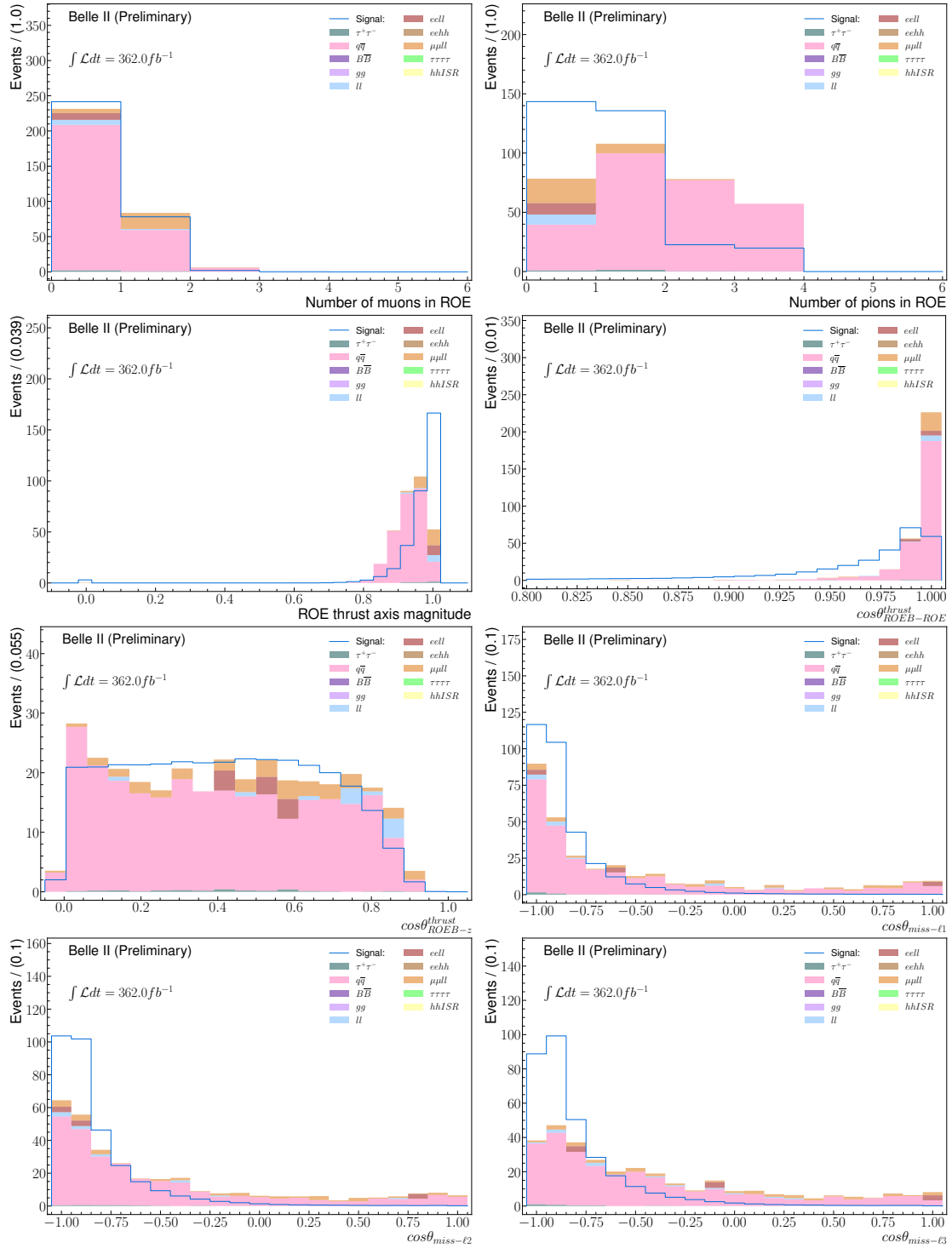


Figure 4.12. – Signal and background comparison in simulation in the  $20\delta$  SR of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for discriminant variables taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection.



## 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

scan of all the parameters for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  channel is given in Figure 4.13, where the best parameters are linked to a high learning rate with a low number of epochs.

### 4.3.3. Background rejection results

#### 4.3.3.1. Optimisation results

BDT classifiers are optimised and trained for each set of preselection presented in Section 4.3.1. In each configuration, the rectangular and ellipsoidal signal regions are tried. The absolute signal efficiency, retained number of background events and Punzi FOM for each combination of preselection and BDT are shown in Figure 4.14. The best background rejection configuration is chosen according to the Punzi figure of merit evaluated on the training sample<sup>4</sup>. The reference and set 1 performance are very close, while the other preselection sets give worse results. Performances of rectangular and elliptical regions are very similar. The elliptical region is preferred as it has a smaller area and will thus be less polluted by background events. Table 4.7 lists the final selection cuts.

The signal and background probability distributions of the BDT output are compared for the train and validation (test) samples in the left (right) plot of Figure 4.15. As stated earlier, the requirement on the BDT output is optimized on the validation folds by maximizing the Punzi figure of merit in the  $5\delta$  SR, as illustrated by the lower plot in Figure 4.15 (left). Optimizing in the validation folds allows for keeping an independent

4. as explained in Sec. 4.3.2, the training sample is split into sub-train and sub-validation samples. In contrast, the final test sample remains independent until the end of the optimization process.

Table 4.6. – Definition and range value of the XGBoost BDT classifier hyperparameters optimised to extract the best performances and avoid overfitting. The range value for each parameter is chosen to be around the default value.

Name	Definition	Scanned Values	Step	Default
n_estimators	Number of boosting rounds.	[100, 500]	50	-
max_depths	Maximum depth of a tree, number of intermediate nodes.	[1, 9]	1	6
min_child_weight	Minimum sum of instance weight needed in a child node.	[0, 10]	1	1
learning_rate	Step size shrinkage used after each boosting update.	[0.01, 0.5]	0.01	0.3
gamma	Minimum loss reduction required to make a further partition on a leaf node of the tree	[0, 10]	1	0

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

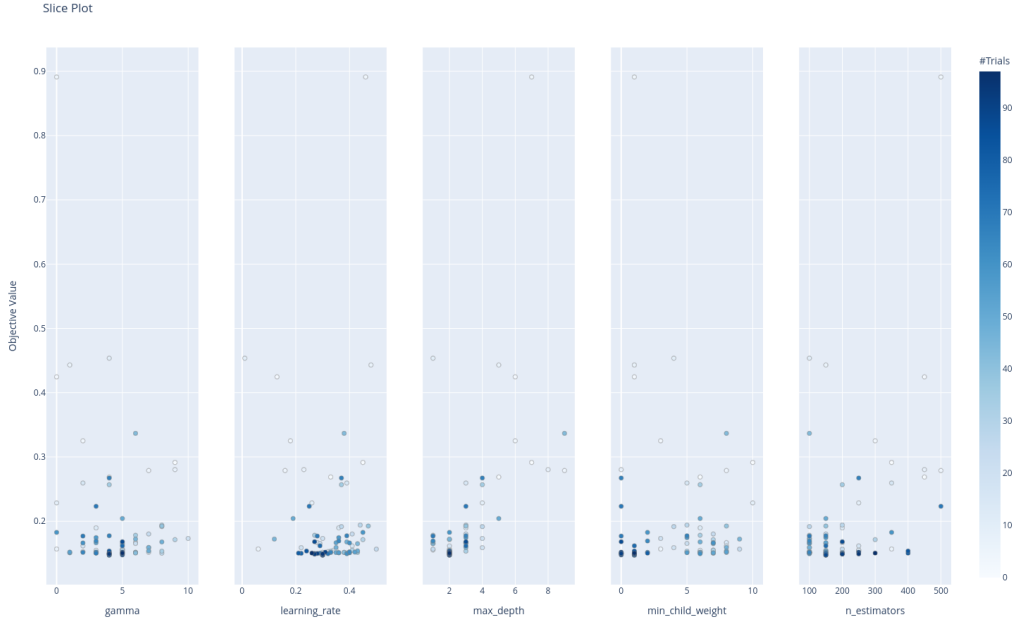


Figure 4.13. – Two-dimensional plots of the Optuna objective value, here logarithmic loss function of the last validation epoch, versus the values of the hyperparameters during the BDT optimisation for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ . At each Optuna trial, the algorithm chooses a set of parameters in the available ranges and trains a BDT. The logarithmic loss function is extracted from each model. A single point in each plot represents each trial. The best hyperparameter set is the lower point.

Table 4.7. – Final background rejection selection after optimizing the Punzi FOM on the training sample.

$\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$
$muID_{lead} > 0.95$
$muID_{sub} > 0.95$
$muID_{third} > 0.5$
$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$
$0.89 < thrust < 0.97$
$p^{BDT} > 0.89$
$3\delta$ ellipse region

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

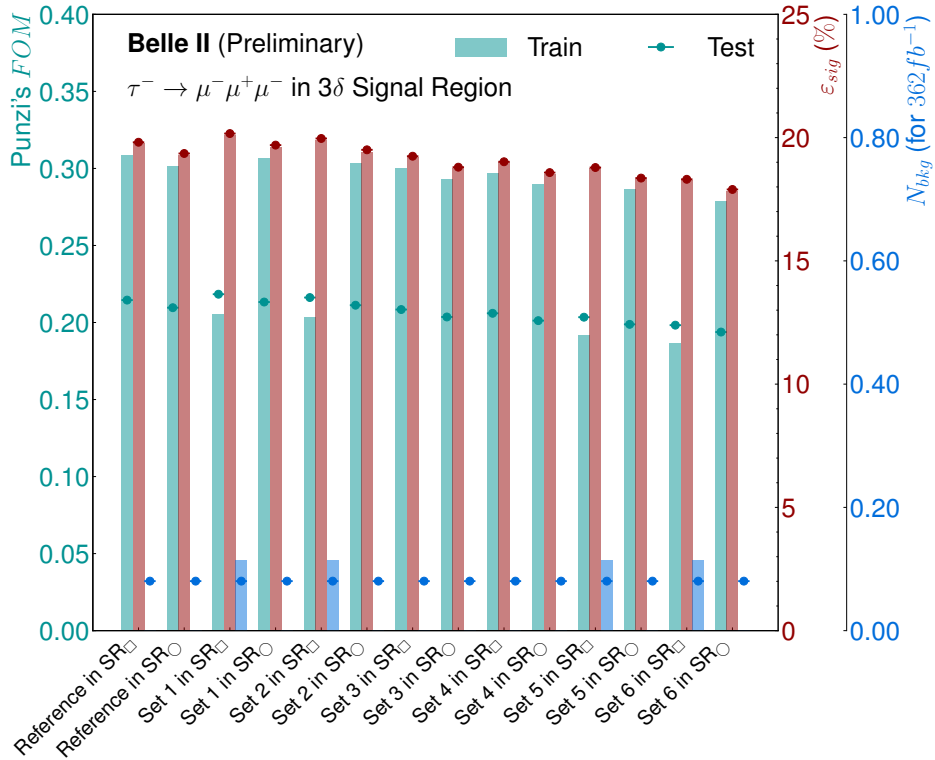


Figure 4.14. – Final background rejection performances, number of surviving backgrounds (blue), absolute signal efficiency (red) and the Punzi’s figure of merit (cyan) for the Train and Test sample for the different preselection and signal region ( $3\delta$  rectangle or ellipse) setups.  $\circ$  label is for the configuration evaluated in the elliptical signal region, while  $\square$  is for the rectangular box one.

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

2034 test sample to evaluate the performances. The corresponding signal efficiency and  
 2035 expected background events before and after the BDT selection for different regions  
 2036 of the 2D plane are given in Table 4.8.

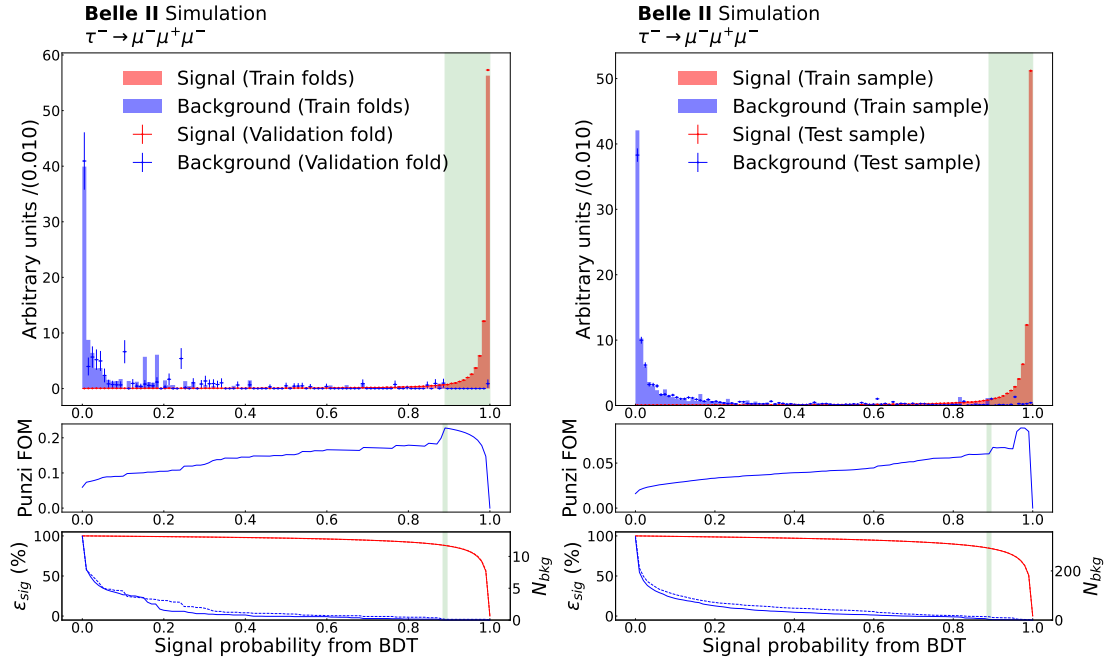


Figure 4.15. – Averaged BDT classifier probability output of being signal for Train and Validation (left) or Test (right) samples. In the middle plot, the row represents the Punzi figure of merit, evaluated on the Validation/Test sample as a function of a selection on the BDT output. The bottom plot represents the absolute signal efficiency (red) and remaining background (blue) scaled to  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  for Train (solid line) and Validation/Test (dashed lines). The green area in both plots corresponds to values selected as a result of the FOM optimisation in  $5\delta$  Signal Region.

2037 The final absolute signal efficiency is  $19.70^{+0.06}_{-0.06} \text{ stat}\%$  for  $0.08^{+0.21}_{-0.07} \text{ stat}$  remaining  
 2038 background events. The numbers of background events are obtained from the  $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$   
 2039 test sample scaled down to  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ .

#### 2040 4.3.3.2. Background composition after preselection and BDT

2041 The composition of the remaining background is analyzed using the  $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  of simu-  
 2042 lated MC test sample. As demonstrated by Table 4.9, in the signal region after applying  
 2043 preselections, the main remaining background is coming from  $q\bar{q}$  samples where the  
 2044 pions and kaons present in the final state are misidentified as muons. Those pions and  
 2045 kaons backgrounds are coming directly from the IP. The other surviving background  
 2046 events fall outside the signal region, as shown in Figure 4.16. We can easily distinguish

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

the distribution of  $\tau^- \tau^+$  background events at low  $M_{3\mu}$  and low  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  due to the invisible energy carried by neutrinos. The remaining low multiplicity backgrounds are well located outside the  $20\delta$  SR used for the background rejection optimisation. When the selection on the BDT classifier output is added, the only surviving event in the test sample is a  $q\bar{q}$  event with misidentified pions and kaons in the final state, presented in Table 4.10.

### 4.3.4. Background rejection validation

#### 4.3.4.1. BDT overfitting monitoring

The BDT is prevented from overfitting by monitoring the logarithmic loss function behaviour for train and validation samples during the boosting in Figure 4.17. The tendency of the validation curve shows if the BDT is overfitting or not. Indeed, the curve decreasing to a floor without increasing indicates the absence of overfitting. Indeed, the overfitting behaviour is traduced by an increasing logarithmic loss function in the validation sample while the train is flat [118]. The divergence from the test curve is not worrisome as long as the two curves have the same general behaviour.

#### 4.3.4.2. BDT peaking structure monitoring

In Figure 4.18, we show the profile plots of the BDT versus the  $M_{3\mu}$  and  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  variables for simulated background events. No peaking structure is visible.

Table 4.8. –  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  signal efficiencies, background yields weighted for a luminosity of  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  and Punzi FOM for the train and test samples before and after applying the BDT selection.

Sample	Signal Region	Pre Selection on BDT		Post Selection on BDT		
		$\epsilon_{signal}^{abs}$ (%)	$N_{bkg}$	$\epsilon_{signal}^{abs}$ (%)	$N_{bkg}$	Punzi FOM
Train	$20\delta$	30.67	333.96	25.96	2.43	0.11799
Test	$20\delta$	30.69	341.49	26.03	13.55	0.06024
Train	$5\delta$	25.32	13.19	22.29	0.11	0.22775
Test	$5\delta$	25.40	13.23	22.38	0.17	0.21281
Train	Elliptical $5\delta$	24.82	10.48	21.88	0.11	0.22361
Test	Elliptical $5\delta$	24.88	10.35	21.96	0.16	0.21216
Train	$3\delta$	22.64	4.35	20.09	0.11	0.20527
Test	$3\delta$	22.72	4.30	20.16	0.08	0.21836
Train	Elliptical $3\delta$	22.08	3.80	19.61	0.00	0.30639
Test	Elliptical $3\delta$	22.16	3.77	19.70	0.08	0.21328

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

Table 4.9. – Simulation truth identification of final state particles for candidates passing the preliminary selection in the  $3\delta$  SR.

$PDG_{\ell_1}^{MC}$	$PDG_{\ell_2}^{MC}$	$PDG_{\ell_3}^{MC}$	type	sample	occurrence
$\pi$	$\pi$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$u\bar{u}$	19
$\pi$	$\pi$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	ddbar	7
$K$	$\pi$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$s\bar{s}$	3
$K$	$\pi$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$u\bar{u}$	2
$\pi$	$\pi$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$s\bar{s}$	2
$\pi$	$K$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$c\bar{c}$	2
$\mu$	$\pi$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$u\bar{u}$	1
$\pi$	$K$	$K$	$q\bar{q}$	$u\bar{u}$	1
$K$	$\pi$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$d\bar{d}$	1
$\pi$	NaN	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$d\bar{d}$	1
$\pi$	$\pi$	NaN	$q\bar{q}$	$u\bar{u}$	1
$\pi$	$K$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$s\bar{s}$	1
$\mu$	NaN	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$c\bar{c}$	1
$\pi$	$\pi$	$K$	$q\bar{q}$	$u\bar{u}$	1
$\pi$	$\pi$	$\mu$	$q\bar{q}$	$u\bar{u}$	1
$\pi$	$\mu$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$d\bar{d}$	1
$K$	$K$	$K$	$q\bar{q}$	$s\bar{s}$	1

Table 4.10. – Simulation truth identification of final state particles for candidates passing the BDT selection in the  $3\delta$  SR.

$PDG_{\ell_1}^{MC}$	$PDG_{\ell_2}^{MC}$	$PDG_{\ell_3}^{MC}$	type	sample	occurrence
$K$	$\pi$	$\pi$	$q\bar{q}$	$s\bar{s}$	1

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

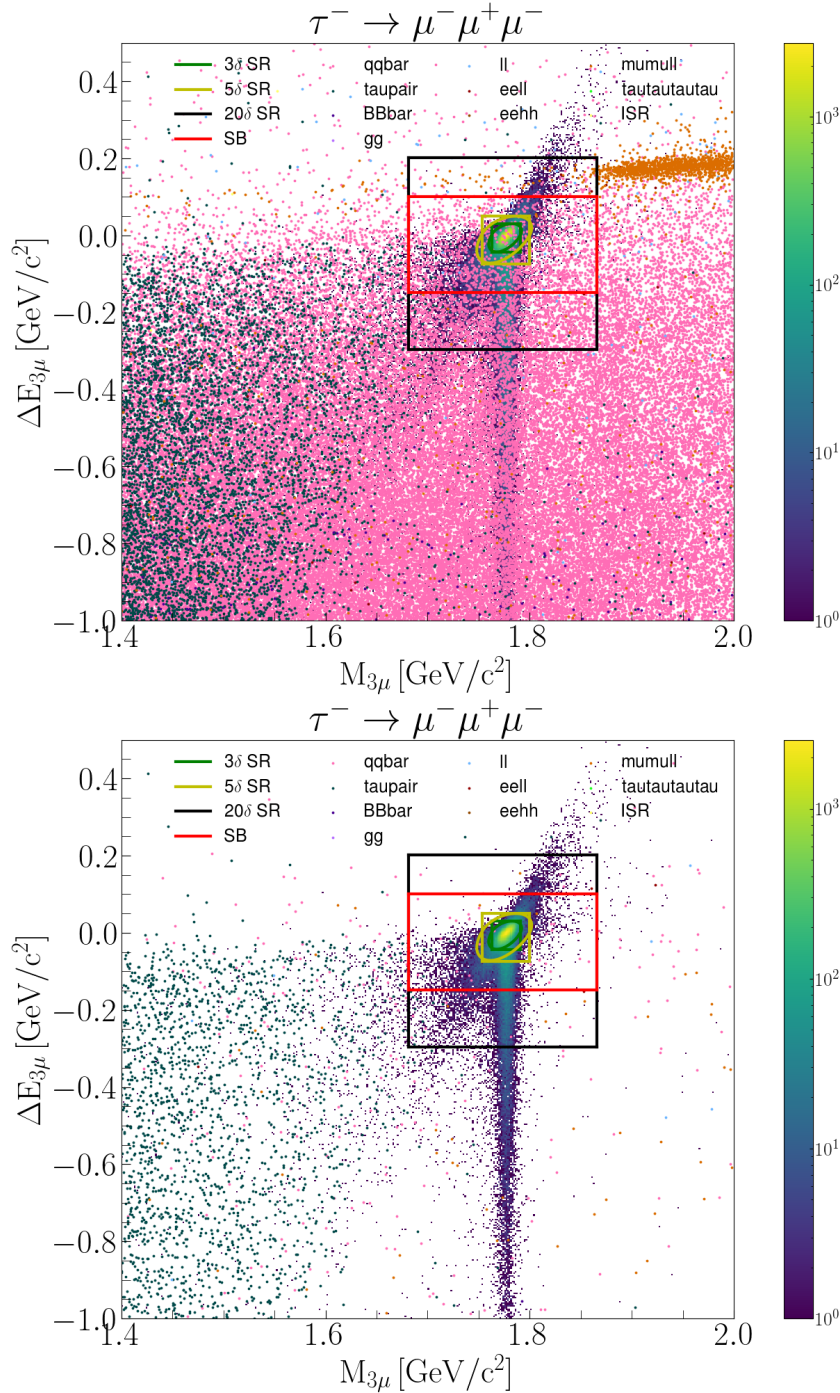


Figure 4.16. – Scatter plot of the different simulated background samples in coloured dots and the signal in density map in the plan  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$ . The two-dimensional distribution of the backgrounds is given at different steps of the background rejection: after applying the nominal pre-selection (top) and after applying the **BDT** classifier (bottom). The different definitions of the signal region are given as reference: **20 $\delta$  SR** (black box), **SB** (red box) and the **5 $\delta$**  and **3 $\delta$**  ellipse **SR**.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

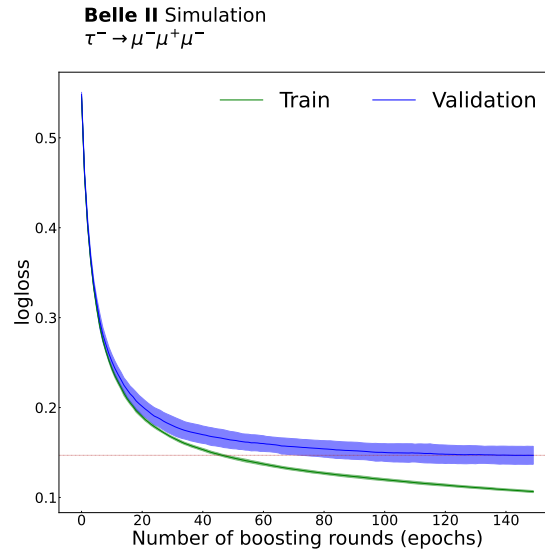


Figure 4.17. – Average (solid line) and fluctuations (filled area) of the logarithmic loss function as a function of the boosting rounds of the  $K$  BDT classifiers for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  channel. The quantity is estimated in both Train (green) and Validation (blue) samples to visualise potential overfitting effects.

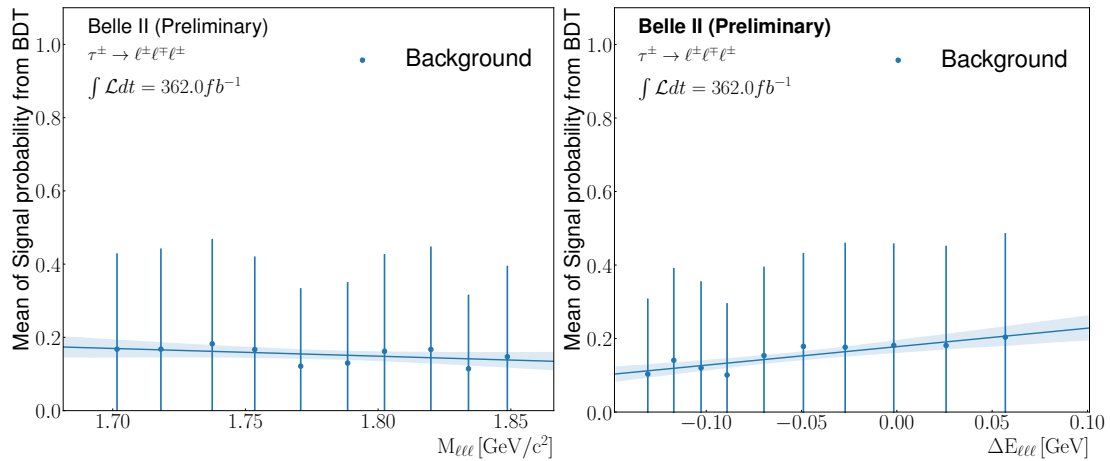


Figure 4.18. – Profile plot of the averaged signal probability BDT output function of the  $M_\tau$  (left) and  $\Delta E_\tau$  (right).



4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

2065 **4.3.4.3. Data/Simulation comparison in sidebands**

The consistency between data and simulation for the variables entering the BDT classifier is checked in the sidebands region, defined by the rectangle of  $\pm 20\delta$  along  $M_{3\mu}$  and  $\pm 10\delta$  in  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ , as shown in Figure 4.19. The distributions for  $M_{3\mu}$ ,  $\Delta E_{3\mu}$  and

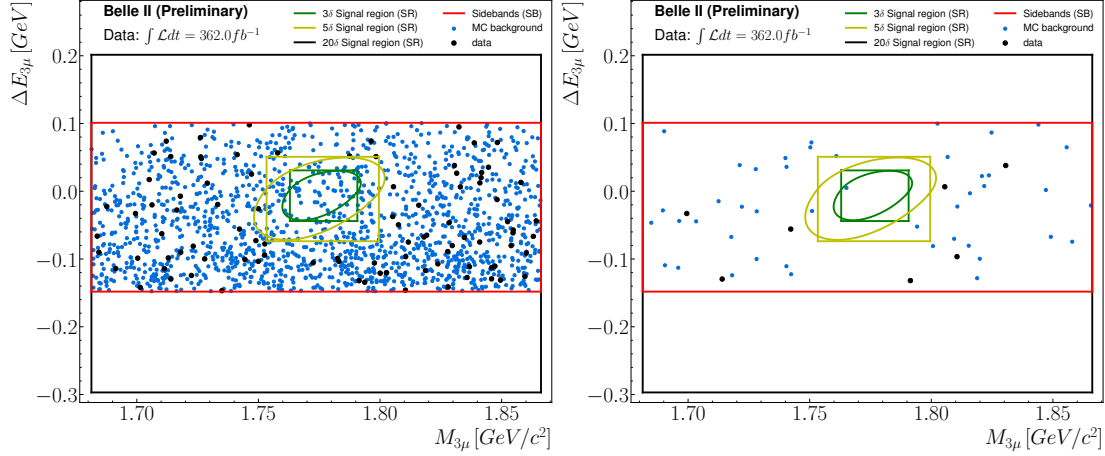


Figure 4.19. – Scatter plots (unweighted) of surviving events after preselection (left) and selection on **BDT** signal probability output (right), in the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  sidebands region (red). The  $\pm 5\delta$  box (yellow) is hidden for data to prevent unblinding. The luminosity for background simulated samples is half of the one listed in Table 2.6.

the **BDT** output  $p_{BDT}$  after the optimal preselection are shown in Figure 4.20 (see Appendix F, Figure 39 for other variables) and after the full background rejection selection in Figure 4.21 (see Appendix F, Figure 40 for other variables). After the preselection, the number of events in the simulation is  $118.1^{+9.8}_{-5.1} stat$  while it is  $94.0^{+10.7}_{-9.7} stat$  in data. It is known that the  $q\bar{q}$  simulated events are overrepresented with respect to the actual data cross-section. A correction factor must be applied to ensure agreement in blinded sidebands. The correction factor is known to be selection-dependent, and we compute it after applying the preselections by:

$$w_{q\bar{q}} = \left| \frac{N^{data} - N_{notq\bar{q}}^{MC}}{N_{q\bar{q}}^{MC}} \right|, \quad (4.17)$$

2066 where  $N^{data} = 94$  is the number of event in data sample,  $N_{notq\bar{q}}^{MC} = 13.91$  the number  
 2067 of simulated events which are not  $q\bar{q}$  and  $N_{q\bar{q}}^{MC} = 104.24$  the number of  $q\bar{q}$  simulated  
 2068 events. The correction factor is equal to 0.77, and is applied for the data/simulation  
 2069 comparison plots after the preselection. After the BDT cut, there are  $3.3^{+1.2}_{-0.7} stat$  events  
 2070 in simulation for  $7.0^{+3.8}_{-2.6} stat$  events in data, the statistics is not significant enough  
 2071 to compute a  $q\bar{q}$  correction factor. In addition, since the expected background yield  
 2072 is obtained without relying on the simulation, as explained in the next section, the

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

correction factor has no impact on the analysis.

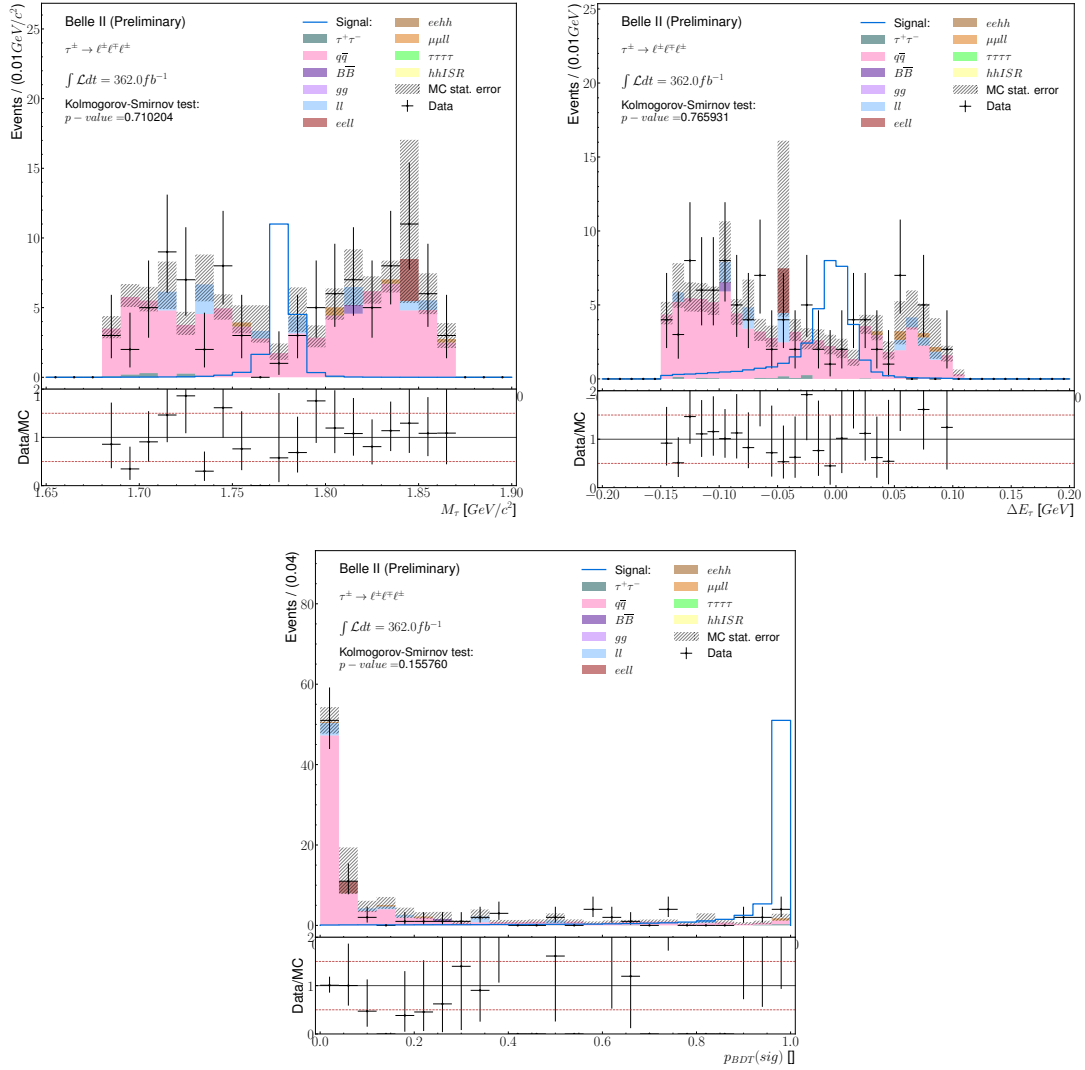


Figure 4.20. – Data-MC comparison in the  $5 - 20(10)\delta$  sidebands of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for  $M_\tau$ ,  $\Delta E_\tau$  and the BDT output probability  $p_{BDT}$  after the preselection. The  $q\bar{q}$  correction factor is applied in those plots.

2073

#### 2074 4.3.5. Expected background yield

2075 The simplest strategy for estimating the number of expected background events  
 2076 in the signal region is usually to extrapolate this number from the data sidebands  
 2077 (sidebands method), as was done in  $\tau \rightarrow \ell\phi$  analysis [17]. This assumes that one knows  
 2078 the yield ratio between the sideband and the signal regions from MC. The difficulty  
 2079 in applying this method in low background level decays such as  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  comes  
 2080 from the low remaining number of MC backgrounds in the signal region. Indeed, this

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

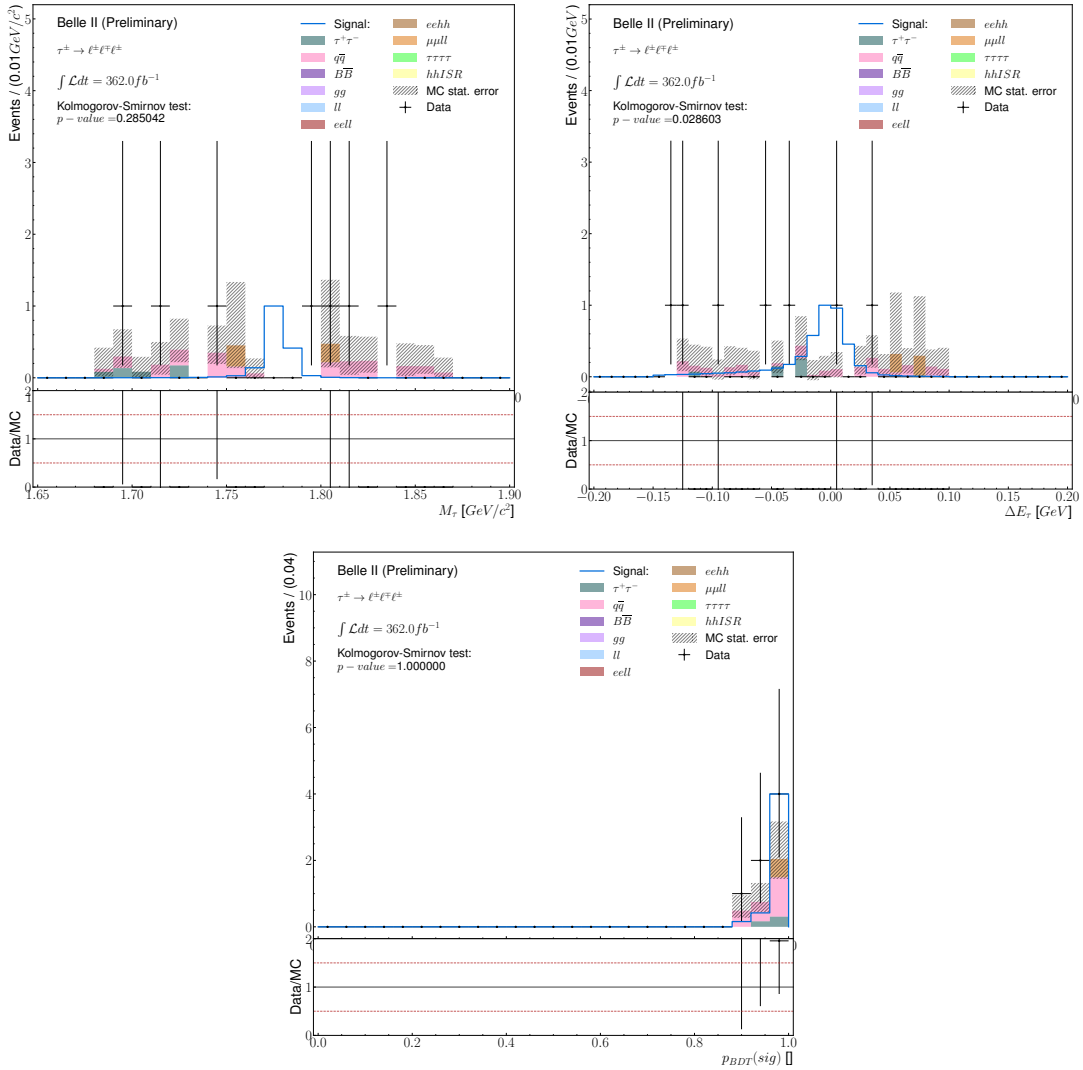


Figure 4.21. – Data-MC comparison in the  $5 - 20(10)\delta$  sidebands of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for  $M_\tau$ ,  $\Delta E_\tau$  and the BDT output probability  $p_{BDT}$  after the preselection and the BDT selection applied.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

2081 will lead to a ratio between sidebands and the signal region very close to 0. For such  
 2082 reason, we will also discuss two other alternative methods, the relaxed LID sidebands  
 2083 method and the ABCD method.

2084 **4.3.5.1. Sidebands method**

To estimate the number of expected background events  $N_{expected,SR}^{Data}$  inside the  $3\delta$  elliptical SR, an extrapolation is performed from the data events  $N_{SB}^{Data}$  left in the  $M_{3\mu}$  sidebands within  $\pm 10\delta\Delta E_{3\mu}$  band, referred as SB, as illustrated in Figure 4.19 (right). The extrapolation is done as follows:

$$N_{expected,SR}^{Data} = N_{SB}^{Data} \times r^{MC}, \quad (4.18)$$

2085 where  $r^{MC}$  is the ratio measured on retained simulated background events between  
 2086 the ones inside the SR and the ones in SB,  $r^{MC} = N_{SR}^{MC} / N_{SB}^{MC}$ . In order to avoid the  
 2087 unblinding risk in data sidebands, we are considering blinding the events in the  $5\delta$   
 2088 signal region. Following this method, the computed values and their asymmetrical  
 statistic errors are given in Table 4.11.

Table 4.11. – Number of background events and their asymmetrical statistic errors left after the nominal background rejection selection in the different regions of the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  plane for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  with the sidebands method.

$N_{SB}^{MC}$	$3.29^{+1.24}_{-0.73} stat$
$N_{SR}^{MC}$	$0.08^{+0.21}_{-0.07} stat$
$r^{MC}$	$0.02^{+0.06}_{-0.02} stat$
$N_{SB}^{Data}$	$7.00^{+3.77}_{-2.58} stat$
$N_{expected,SR}^{Data}$	$0.17^{+0.46}_{-0.17} stat$

2089

2090 **4.3.5.2. Relaxed LID sidebands method**

A similar approach could be done relaxing the LID requirements from  $\mu ID_{lead} > 0.95$  and  $\mu ID_{sub} > 0.95$  to  $\mu ID_{lead} > 0.5$  and  $\mu ID_{sub} > 0.5$ . This increases the statistic, shown in Figure 4.22, in the SR. Still, the efficiency on LID requirements  $\varepsilon_{LID}^{rel}$  has to be estimated in simulation assuming it is flat in the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  SR. Thus the equation 4.18 became:

$$N_{expected,SR}^{Data} = N_{SB}^{Data} \times \varepsilon_{LID}^{MC} \times r^{MC}, \quad (4.19)$$

2091

2092 The computed values and their asymmetrical statistic errors are given in Table 4.12.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

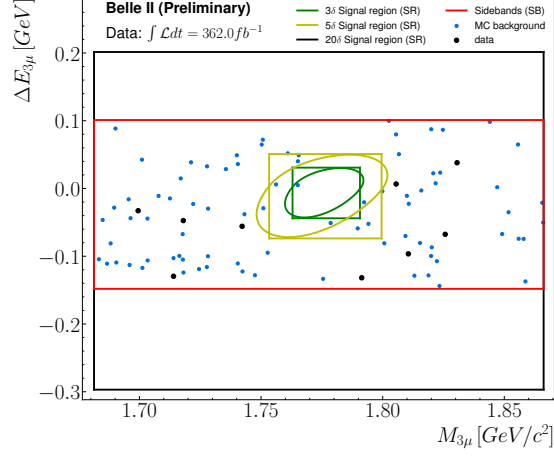


Figure 4.22. – Scatter plots (unweighted) of surviving events after applying the relaxed **LID** at 0.5, preselection and selection on **BDT** signal probability output, in the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  sidebands region (red) for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ . Data are hidden in the  $\pm 5\delta$  box (yellow) to prevent unblinding. The luminosity for background simulated samples is half of the one listed in Table 2.6.

Table 4.12. – Number of background events and their asymmetrical statistic errors left after the nominal background rejection selection in the different regions of the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  plane for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  with the relaxed **LID** sidebands method.

$N_{SB}^{MC}$	$7.15^{+1.36}_{-0.89} stat$
$N_{SR}^{MC}$	$0.09^{+0.21}_{-0.07} stat$
$r^{MC}$	$0.01^{+0.03}_{-0.01} stat$
$\epsilon^{rel}$	$43.88\%^{+17.65}_{-10.72} stat$
$N_{SB}^{Data}$	$9.00^{+4.11}_{-2.94} stat$
$N_{expected,SR}^{Data}$	$0.05^{+0.12}_{-0.05} stat$

2093 **4.3.5.3. Data driven ABCD method**

2094 The data-driven methods to extract the expected number of backgrounds are often  
 2095 more reliable as they don't rely on a perfect agreement between data and simulations.  
 2096 The "ABCD" method, used here, was originally devised by LHC experiments [22,  
 2097 121] to deal with mis-modelled multijet QCD backgrounds. The two-dimensional  
 2098 plane chosen here is defined by the elliptical distance in the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  plane (see  
 2099 Equation 4.8) which corresponds to the 2 cases *in* or *outside* the SR, and the BDT  
 2100 signal probability output  $p^{BDT}(sig)$ . This two-dimensional plane is divided into four  
 2101 regions, as shown in Figure 4.23:

- 2102 • region A: Outside the elliptical  $\pm 5\delta$  SR and  $0.2 < p^{BDT}(sig) < 0.5$ ,
- 2103 • region B: Inside the elliptical  $\pm 3\delta$  SR and  $0.2 < p^{BDT}(sig) < 0.5$ ,
- 2104 • region C: Outside the elliptical  $\pm 5\delta$  SR and  $p^{BDT}(sig) > 0.89$ ,
- 2105 • region D: Inside the elliptical  $\pm 3\delta$  SR and  $p^{BDT}(sig) > 0.89$ .

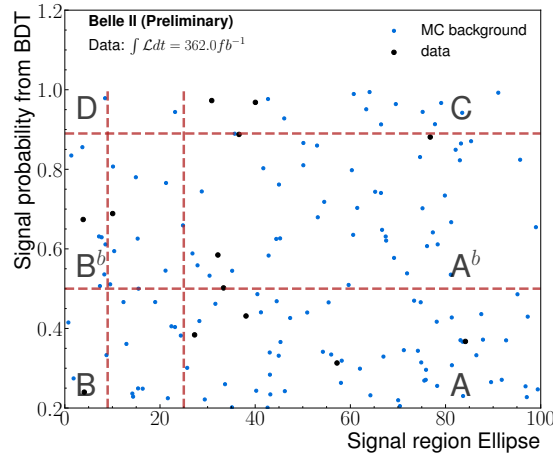


Figure 4.23. – Scatter plots (unweighted) of surviving events after applying the LID, preselection, in the plane between the elliptical distance from the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  centre and the BDT signal probability output for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ . Red dashed lines define the limit of the four ABCD regions. Data are hidden in D regions to prevent unblinding. The luminosity for background simulated samples is half of the one listed in Table 2.6.

The ABC regions are used as control regions, while D is a region where the background is estimated, in our case, where the signal is expected to peak. To avoid potential signal contamination in B and C, the events falling between  $3\delta$  and  $5\delta$ , or  $0.5 < p^{BDT}(sig) < 0.89$  are not used. In addition, an upper bound at  $\pm 10\delta$  ellipse is set for the regions A and C to be strictly included in the SB. The number of events in D is extrapolated from the distribution in C as:

$$N_D^{expected} = N_C \times R_{B/A}, \quad (4.20)$$

2106 where  $R_{B/A} = N_B/N_A$  is a transfer factor between the region A and B.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

2107 In the ABCD method, it is assumed that the transfer factor between A and B is the  
 2108 same as the one between C and D. The regions  $A^b$  and  $B^b$  between AB and CD are  
 2109 defined to avoid possible data unblinding by taking a certain distance to high BDT  
 2110 output. Thanks to the upper bound on the BDT output at 0.5, the signal efficiency  
 2111 is about 0.4%, which is reasonable to avoid unblinding. Region C is the second area  
 2112 that is at risk. It has a signal efficiency of 2.2%, which results in 0.2 signal events  
 2113 with the Belle's branching fraction ( $2.1 \times 10^{-8}$ ) for 0.9 background events. However,  
 2114 the high signal efficiency in region C is under control thanks to the blinding of the  
 2115  $5\delta$  SR ellipse. The signal efficiency in the other region is given in Table 4.15. We  
 2116 also used these regions  $A^b$  and  $B^b$  to control the transfer factor uniformity along the  
 2117 BDT output, comparing  $R_{B/A}$  and  $R_{Bb/Ab}$ . An additional check is done by looking  
 2118 at the distribution for the two variables used in the method, Figure 4.24. The data  
 2119 and simulated backgrounds are uniformly distributed along the two variables, which  
 2120 ensures a coherent transfer factor between the different regions. The "ABCD" method  
 2121 efficiently evaluates the background from only one background type. From this figure,  
 one can also see that the  $q\bar{q}$  background dominates. The computed final number of

Table 4.13. – Number of backgrounds and their asymmetrical statistic errors after the nominal background rejection selection for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  with the ABCD method in data.

$N_A$	$4.00^{+3.16}_{-1.91} stat$
$N_B$	$1.00^{+2.30}_{-0.83} stat$
$N_{Ab}$	$4.00^{+3.16}_{-1.91} stat$
$N_{Bb}$	$1.00^{+2.30}_{-0.83} stat$
$R_{B/A}$	$0.25^{+0.61}_{-0.24} stat$
$R_{Bb/Ab}$	$0.25^{+0.61}_{-0.24} stat$
$N_C$	$2.00^{+2.64}_{-1.29} stat$
$N_D^{expected}$	$0.50^{+1.38}_{-0.50} stat$
$N_{Db}^{expected}$	$0.50^{+1.38}_{-0.50} stat$

2122 events and their asymmetrical statistic errors are reported in Table 4.13.

2123 As a final check, we also apply the ABCD method on simulated events, and results  
 2124 are shown in Table 4.14. The expected yields computed from regions  $ABC$  and  $AbBbC$   
 2125 are compatible with the observed yield in D.  
 2126

#### 2127 4.3.5.4. Final background yield

2128 The three methods estimate the background yield in the SR to be  $0.17^{+0.46}_{-0.17}$  (side-  
 2129 band),  $0.05^{+0.05}_{-0.12}$  (relaxed LID), and  $0.50^{+1.38}_{-0.50}$  (ABCD). Given the large statistical uncer-  
 2130 tainties, the three methods agree, but the ABCD method has the advantage of not  
 2131 relying on simulation. It is thus the most robust one. One can note that it is also a  
 2132 conservative choice since it gives the highest expected yield.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.3. Background suppression

Table 4.14. – Number of backgrounds and their asymmetrical statistic errors after the nominal background rejection selection for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  with the ABCD method in simulation.

$N_A$	$5.43^{+1.87}_{-0.89} stat$
$N_B$	$0.46^{+0.32}_{-0.14} stat$
$N_{Ab}$	$3.47^{+1.84}_{-0.82} stat$
$N_{Bb}$	$0.55^{+0.43}_{-0.22} stat$
$R_{B/A}$	$0.08^{+0.07}_{-0.03} stat$
$R_{Bb/Ab}$	$0.16^{+0.15}_{-0.07} stat$
$R_{D/C}$	$0.09^{+0.25}_{-0.09} stat$
$N_C$	$0.92^{+0.99}_{-0.41} stat$
$N_D^{expected}$	$0.08^{+0.10}_{-0.04} stat$
$N_{Db}^{expected}$	$0.14^{+0.21}_{-0.09} stat$
$N_D$	$0.08^{+0.21}_{-0.07} stat$

Table 4.15. – Checks to control the unblinding risk in the different zone used for the ABCD method, using the simulation. An expected number of signals in each zone is obtained with the signal efficiency and assuming the branching fraction corresponding to the Belle limit. This number of signals is compared to the number of simulated backgrounds.

	$\epsilon_{sig}^{abs}$ (%)	$N_{sgn}^{expBelleBR}$	$N_{bkg}$
Zone A	$0.11^{+0.00}_{-0.00} stat$	$0.02^{+0.00}_{-0.00} stat$	$5.43^{+1.87}_{-0.89} stat$
Zone B	$0.40^{+0.01}_{-0.01} stat$	$0.06^{+0.00}_{-0.00} stat$	$0.46^{+0.32}_{-0.14} stat$
Zone Ab	$0.45^{+0.01}_{-0.00} stat$	$0.06^{+0.00}_{-0.00} stat$	$3.47^{+1.84}_{-0.82} stat$
Zone Bb	$1.89^{+0.02}_{-0.02} stat$	$0.26^{+0.00}_{-0.00} stat$	$0.55^{+0.43}_{-0.22} stat$
Zone C	$2.23^{+0.02}_{-0.02} stat$	$0.31^{+0.00}_{-0.00} stat$	$0.92^{+0.99}_{-0.41} stat$
Zone D	$19.70^{+0.06}_{-0.06} stat$	$2.75^{+0.01}_{-0.01} stat$	$0.08^{+0.21}_{-0.07} stat$



## 2133 4.4. Study of the systematics uncertainties

2134 In this section, we will analyze the primary sources of systematic uncertainty that  
 2135 can affect various quantities involved in the measurement of branching fraction on  
 2136  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ , given in Eq. 4.29. It is necessary to consider these uncertainties when  
 2137 calculating the upper limit accurately. The systematic uncertainties come either from  
 2138 detector effects, as resolutions and efficiencies that have to be measured on real data,  
 2139 or from the differences between the simulation used for analysis optimization and  
 2140 for the signal efficiency estimation. Both types of contributions need to be estimated  
 2141 with dedicated performance and data validation studies: some are specific to this  
 2142 analysis and derived from comparisons between data and simulation, while others are  
 2143 provided as uncertainty estimations common to all analyses provided by the Belle II  
 2144 performance group. A summary of these sources, along with their relation to the  
 2145 relevant quantities, is provided in Table 4.19.

### 2146 4.4.1. Uncertainty on signal efficiency

2147 The calculation of signal efficiency is highly sensitive to simulation mismodelling as  
 2148 it is entirely based on simulations. The main factors contributing to this uncertainty  
 2149 are particle identification, trigger, and track reconstruction efficiencies. We examine  
 2150 the differences between the data and the simulation to estimate the errors.

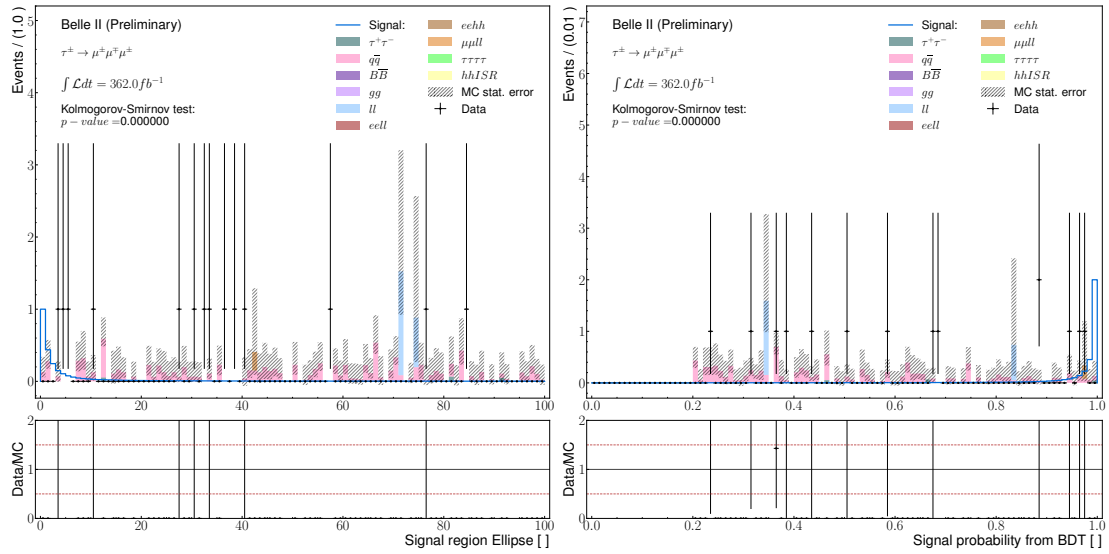


Figure 4.24. – Comparison between data and simulation for the variables entering in the "ABCD" method: elliptical distance from the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  centre, Eq. 4.8 (left) and the BDT signal probability output (right).

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.4. Study of the systematics uncertainties

2151 **4.4.1.1. Particle identification efficiency and misidentification probability**

2152 It is acknowledged that the Lepton identification probabilities are not accurately  
2153 represented in simulations, causing disparities in comparison to real data.

From the lepton identification performance studies [122, 95], weights are provided in order to correct the simulation and take into account the statistical and systematic uncertainties on LID efficiencies and fake rates. The given corrections are track dependant weights  $w_{LID,\ell i}$ , a global correction  $w_{LID}^{stat,\uparrow\downarrow}$  is defined as:

$$w_{LID}^{stat,\uparrow\downarrow} = \prod_{i=1}^3 w_{LID,\ell i} \times w_{LID,\ell i}^{stat,\uparrow\downarrow} \quad (4.21)$$

Then, the signal efficiency is recomputed using the statistical and systematics LID variation, and a relative error is computed as:

$$\sigma_{LID}^{stat,\uparrow\downarrow} = \sqrt{\left(\frac{n_{LID} - n_{LID}^{stat,\uparrow\downarrow}}{n_{produced}}\right)^2} \times \frac{1}{\epsilon_{sig}^{abs}}, \quad (4.22)$$

2154 where  $n_{LID}$  ( $n_{LID}^{stat,\uparrow\downarrow}$ ) is the number of signal events computed with the nominal LID  
2155 weight  $w_{LID}$  (the systematics or statistical LID weights  $w_{LID}^{stat,\uparrow\downarrow}$ ) and  $n_{produced}$  is the  
2156 number of simulated signal events produced.

2157 The detailed errors are in Table 4.16. Adding the maximal error for the statistics and  
2158 systematic contribution in quadrature gives an overall relative systematic uncertainty of 2.39%.

Table 4.16. – Detailed signal efficiencies and deviation with the different LID correction variations. After applying the whole background rejection selections, the numbers are obtained in the Signal Region.

LID correction variation	$N_{sgn}$	$\epsilon_{sn}^{abs}$ (%)	Deviation	$\sigma_{LID}^{abs}$	$\sigma_{LID}^{rel}$
Nominal	98478.74	19.70	-	-	-
Statistical ↓	96411.04	19.28	2067.70	0.004135	2.10
Statistical ↑	100769.97	20.15	2291.23	0.004582	2.33
Systematics ↓	98129.62	19.63	349.12	0.000698	0.35
Systematics ↑	99008.57	19.80	529.83	0.001060	0.54

2159

2160 **4.4.1.2. Trigger efficiency**

2161 The trigger is a crucial element in data collection, but it is difficult to simulate  
2162 accurately. As explained in Section 4.2.4.2, the selected events are required to fire the  
2163 ECL-based or the CDC-based trigger lines. In order to assess the overall difference

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.4. Study of the systematics uncertainties

2164 in trigger efficiency between data and simulation, we analyze the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \pi^- \pi^+ \pi^- \nu_\tau$   
 2165 control sample [123]. The systematic uncertainty is estimated as the total variation  
 2166 observed in the ratio between the data and simulation efficiencies.0

The systematics uncertainty is derived from the agreement between data and simulation for the trigger efficiency. The trigger efficiency can't be absolutely computed in data since the number of generated events, *i.e.* before requiring the L1 trigger, is unknown. To handle this issue, the method is to evaluate the efficiency using orthogonal trigger selections: the efficiency of ECL-based trigger lines (*hie* and *lmlX*,  $X=6,7,8,9,10,12$ ) are evaluated on events triggered by the CDC, while the efficiency of CDC-based trigger lines (*ffy* and *fyo*) are evaluated on events passing ECL trigger requirements, as defined by :

$$\varepsilon_{ECL} = \frac{(lmlX \text{ OR } hie) \text{ AND } (ffy \text{ OR } fyo)}{ffy \text{ OR } fyo} \quad (4.23)$$

$$\varepsilon_{CDC} = \frac{(lmlX \text{ OR } hie) \text{ AND } (ffy \text{ OR } fyo)}{lmlX \text{ OR } hie} \quad (4.24)$$

For each trigger group, the difference between data  $\varepsilon^{Data}$  and simulation  $\varepsilon^{MC}$  efficiencies relative to unity is computed as:

$$\delta_{ECL} = \left| 1 - \frac{\varepsilon_{ECL}^{Data}}{\varepsilon_{ECL}^{MC}} \right|, \quad \delta_{CDC} = \left| 1 - \frac{\varepsilon_{CDC}^{Data}}{\varepsilon_{CDC}^{MC}} \right|. \quad (4.25)$$

2167 To prevent any risks of signal unblinding, the study is based on the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \pi^- \pi^+ \pi^- \nu_\tau$   
 2168 control sample using  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  of data and  $1 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  of simulation samples, including  
 2169 generic and low-multiplicity processes. The **Control Sample (CS)** is reconstructed  
 2170 similarly to  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ , as described in Section 4.2. Three charged pions from a  $\tau^-$   
 2171 replace the combination of three muons. To ensure orthogonal reconstruction and  
 2172 avoid accidental unblinding, a veto on **LID** is applied since pions can be identified as  
 2173 muons and vice versa. Additionally, some requirements must be met, such as passing  
 2174 the considered trigger lines and the  $\tau^-$  **LFV** skim requirement.

The trigger efficiencies are computed as a function of the transverse momentum of the leading and third muon, as seen in Figure 4.25. A linear fit is used to obtain the efficiencies reported in Table 4.17. Since the ECL lines trigger a majority of the events, the systematic uncertainty is computed using the weighted average:

$$\sigma_{TRG} = \varepsilon_{ECL}^{MC} \delta_{ECL} + (\varepsilon_{tot}^{MC} - \varepsilon_{ECL}^{MC}) \delta_{CDC} = 1.0\%, \quad (4.26)$$

2175 where the  $\varepsilon^{MC}$  are the ones from Figure 4.6 and the  $\delta$  are the averaged values obtained  
 2176 from the two variables.

#### 2177 4.4.1.3. Tracking efficiency

Tracking efficiency was measured using tag-and-probe techniques in  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \tau^+ \tau^-$  events, targeting 1-prong ( $\tau^- \rightarrow e^- \bar{\nu}_e \nu_\tau$ ) and 3-prong ( $\tau^- \rightarrow \pi^- \pi^+ \pi^- \nu_\tau$ ) decays [92].

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.4. Study of the systematics uncertainties

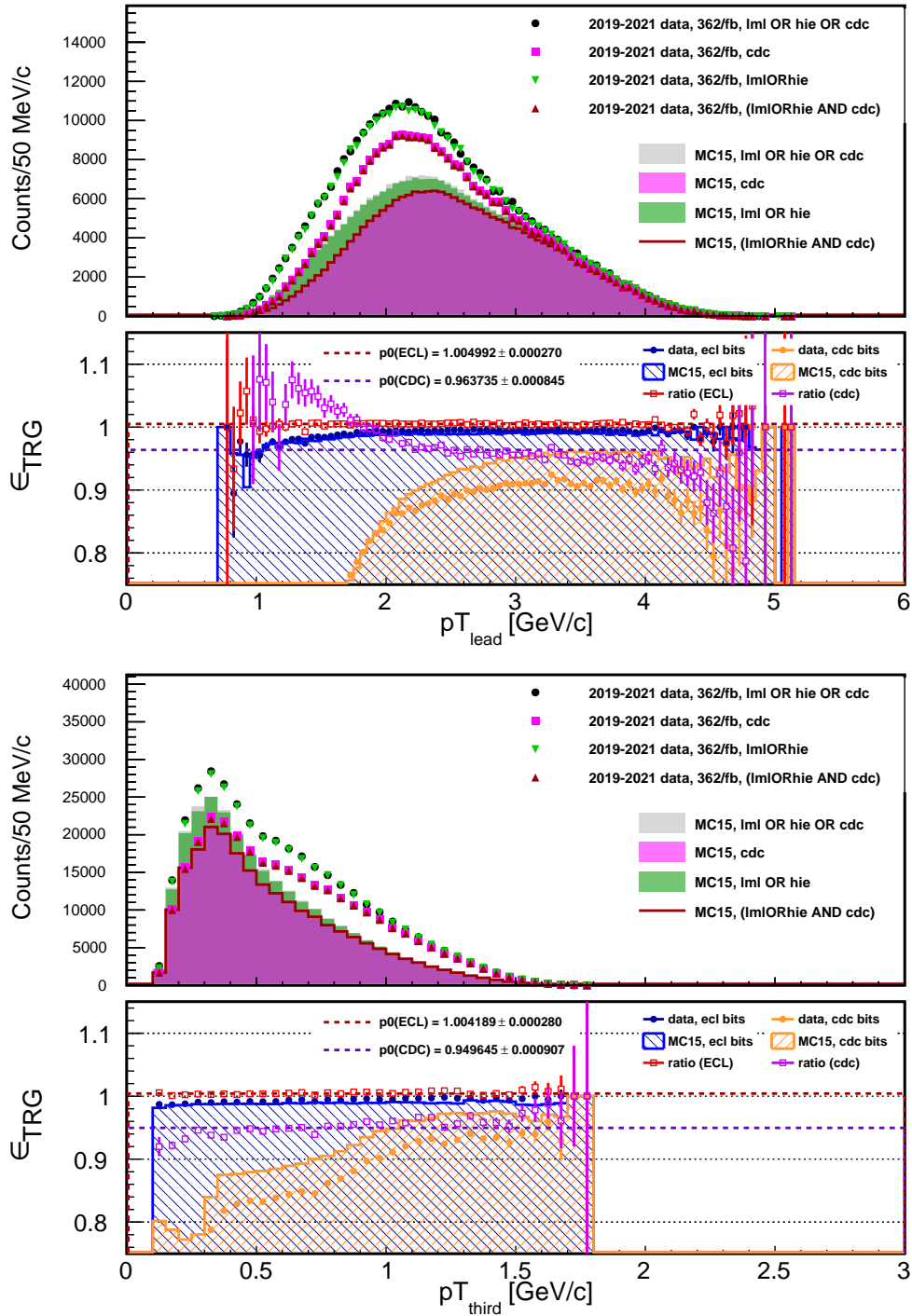


Figure 4.25. – Distribution of the leading momentum pion (top) and third momentum pion (bottom) in data and simulation with the CDC or ECL triggers fired. Trigger efficiency for the ECL and CDC and the discrepancy between data and simulation. The trigger systematics is derived as the constant fit of the discrepancy between data and simulation.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.4. Study of the systematics uncertainties

Three high-quality tracks were utilised to tag  $\tau$ -pair events. These tracks have a total charge of  $\pm 1$ . The existence of a fourth track can be inferred from charge conservation since the total charge of the event must be equal to zero. The per-track reconstruction efficiency  $\varepsilon_{tracking}$  was computed:

$$\varepsilon_{track} = \frac{N_4}{N_3 + N_4}, \quad (4.27)$$

2178 where  $N_4$  is the number of events where all four tracks are found, while  $N_3$  is the num-  
2179 ber of events where the fourth track is not found. Finally, the systematic uncertainty  
2180 is extracted from the mismodeling of the efficiency in MC simulation computed by

$$2181 \delta = 1 - \frac{\varepsilon_{tracking}^{data}}{\varepsilon_{tracking}^{MC}}.$$

2182 The study led by the performance group established an uncertainty of 0.24% per  
2183 track applied. Summing this contribution for the three reconstructed tracks, the  
2184 associated systematic uncertainty is 0.72%.

## 2185 4.4.2. Uncertainty on the expected background yield

### 2186 4.4.2.1. Track momentum scale

Errors in the magnetic field map used for data reconstruction can cause a bias in track momentum compared to the true value and the MC simulated samples. To address this calibration issue, correction factors for momentum scaling are calculated based on the observed  $D^0$  mass shift in  $D^{*+} \rightarrow [D^0 \rightarrow K^- \pi^+] \pi^+$  events [124]. These scale factors are then directly applied to the data according to the Performance group's recommendations. The value of the scale factor is set at  $0.99987(+3.8/ - 5.7) \times 10^{-4}$ , with two additional data samples created by applying variations in both directions. The systematics uncertainties are calculated from the number of data in the sidebands region  $N^{data}$  varying the scale factor as:

$$\sigma_{MomentumScale}^{rel} = \left| \frac{N_{True\ Scale}^{data} - N_{Low,High\ Scale}^{data}}{N_{True\ Scale}^{data}} \right|. \quad (4.28)$$

2187 The detailed numbers are given in Table 4.18. Taking the highest deviation between  
2188 low and high variation, the final relative systematics uncertainties is 5.3%.

Table 4.17. – Trigger efficiency discrepancy between data and simulations measured on the  $\tau \rightarrow \pi\pi\pi\nu$  control sample.

Variable	$\delta_{CDC}$	$\delta_{ECL}$
$p_{lead}^T$	3.63%	0.5%
$p_{third}^T$	5.04%	0.4%

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.4. Study of the systematics uncertainties

2189 **4.4.2.2. Extraction method**

2190 Since the ABCD method doesn't depend on simulation, and the checks done show  
2191 no bias, we don't assign any systematic uncertainty to the method used to extract the  
2192 background yield.

2193 **4.4.3. Other sources**

- 2194 • Luminosity: the systematic uncertainty on the integrated luminosity has been  
2195 measured in [78], using Phase 2 data, on two samples corresponding to either  
2196 Bhabha or di-photons events. The combination of both measurements gives a  
2197 relative uncertainty of 0.6%.
- 2198 • Tau pair cross-section: the uncertainty on this parameter was determined in  
2199 [125] as 0.003 nb.

2200 **4.4.4. Systematics uncertainties summary**

2201 Table 4.19 displays the systematics uncertainties taken into consideration for com-  
2202 puting the upper limit of exclusion at a 90% CL.

Table 4.18. – Detailed number of data events in the blind sidebands after applying the preselections for each variation of the momentum scale applied. Systematics uncertainties are derived from the difference in number of events.

	$N^{data}$	$\sigma_{stat}^{\downarrow}$	$\sigma_{stat}^{\uparrow}$	$\sigma_{sys}^{abs}$	$\sigma_{sys}^{rel}$ (%)
True scale	94.0	9.68	10.73	0.0	-
Low scale	92.0	9.57	10.63	2.0	2.13
High scale	99.0	9.93	10.98	5.0	5.32

Table 4.19. – Relative systematic uncertainties entering the upper limit computation as a function of the decay mode.

Affected quantity	Source	value
$\epsilon_{\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-}$	Particle identification	2.39%
	Tracking efficiency	0.72%
	Trigger efficiency	1.0%
$N_{exp}$	Momentum scale	5.0%
$L$	Luminosity	0.6%
$\sigma_{\tau\tau}$	Tau-pair cross section	0.3%

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.5. Branching fraction upper-limit estimation

## 2203 4.5. Branching fraction upper-limit estimation

Once the signal efficiency and the numbers of expected background events have been derived, an upper limit on the branching fraction for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  LFV decays:

$$\mathcal{B}_{UL}^{90} = \frac{s^{90}}{2 \times L \times \sigma_{\tau^+\tau^-} \times \epsilon_{\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-}}, \quad (4.29)$$

### 2204 4.5.1. $CL_s$ method

The upper limit is computed using the RooStat package and the  $CL_s$  method [113, 23]. The  $CL_s$  method is parametrized by looking at the expected number of events  $n$  which follows a Poisson distribution with an expectation value:

$$E[n] = \mu s + b, \quad (4.30)$$

where respectively  $\mu s$  and  $b$  are the signal and background yields. Following Eq. 4.29, the signal yield can be expressed as:

$$\mu s = L \times 2\sigma_{\tau^+\tau^-} \times \epsilon_{\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-} \times \mathcal{B}(\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-). \quad (4.31)$$

2205 Thanks to this parameterization, the parameter of interest, denoted as  $\mu$ , can be  
 2206 defined as the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  branching fraction  $\mu = \mathcal{B}(\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-)$ . And so  $s$   
 2207 is set as the product of the luminosity  $L$ , the  $\tau$ -pair cross section  $\sigma_{\tau^+\tau^-}$ , and the  
 2208 signal efficiency of the selection criteria for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decay mode  $\epsilon_{\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-}$ :  
 2209  $s = L \times 2\sigma_{\tau^+\tau^-} \times \epsilon_{\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-}$ .

The branching fraction (parameter of interest) is estimated using the toy-based calculator of RooStat [126] for 25 points evenly distributed between 0 and  $5 \times 10^{-8}$  using 10k toys at each point. The upper-limit at 90% C.L. on  $\mathcal{B}(\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-)$  can be computed by setting  $CL_s = 10\%$ , where:

$$CL_s = \frac{CL_{s+b}}{CL_b}, \quad (4.32)$$

2210 with  $CL_{s+b}$  and  $CL_b$  are respectively the "signal+background" and "background" only  
 2211 hypothesis  $p$ -values.

### 2212 4.5.2. Statistical uncertainties

The statistical uncertainties are assigned to the data and MC yields by a frequentist approach. The Poisson likelihood is integrated iteratively in order to find the values  $\lambda_1, \lambda_2$  such as:

$$P(n \leq N_{bin} | \lambda_1) \leq 0.16, \quad (4.33)$$

$$P(n \geq N_{bin} | \lambda_2) \leq 0.16, \quad (4.34)$$

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – 4.5. Branching fraction upper-limit estimation

with  $N_{bin}$  the measured unweighted yield in each bin of the given distributions. Giving the values  $\lambda$ , the error bars are defined as:

$$\sigma_{low}^{stat} = N_{bin} - \lambda_2, \quad (4.35)$$

$$\sigma_{high}^{stat} = \lambda_1 - N_{bin}, \quad (4.36)$$

$$(4.37)$$

2213 where  $\sigma_{low}^{stat}$  and  $\sigma_{high}^{stat}$  are respectively the lower and upper statistical uncertainties.

### 2214 4.5.3. Upper limit results

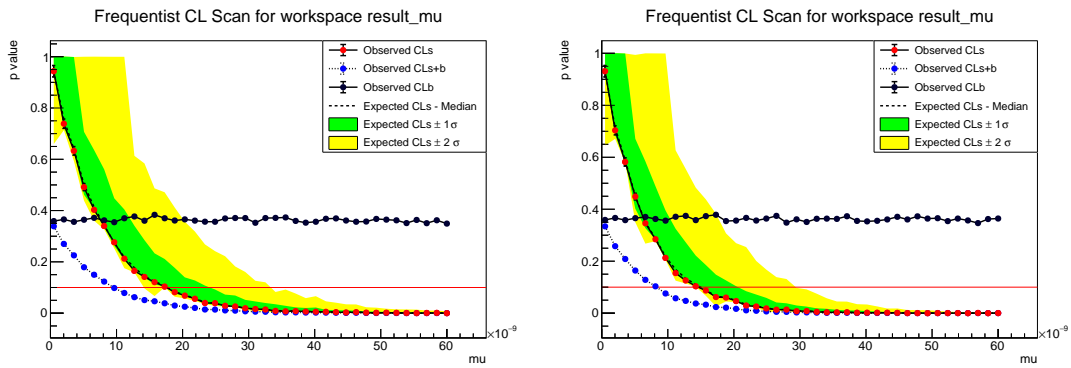


Figure 4.26. – Expected  $CL_s$  as a function of the upper limit on the branching fraction of  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  for statistics of  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  (left) and  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  (right). The red line corresponds to the 90% confidence level.

The upper limit of the branching fraction has been estimated for the data collected at an energy of  $\Upsilon(4S)$  with a luminosity of  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ . Additionally, an estimation has been made for the extended dataset with the  $\Upsilon(4S)$ ,  $\Upsilon(5S)$  and off-resonance energy, which has a total luminosity of  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ . By using the signal efficiency after the background rejection, reported in Table 4.8, the expected number of background events, reported in Table 4.13, and the systematic uncertainties reported in Table 4.19, we obtain the expected  $CL_s$ , in Figure 4.26 and a corresponding expected 90% C.L. upper-limit on  $\mathcal{B}(\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\mu)$  for  $362$  ( $424$ )  $\text{fb}^{-1}$ :

$$\mathcal{B}_{UL,exp}^{90}(\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\mu) = 1.77(1.51) \times 10^{-8}. \quad (4.38)$$

2215 For the limit evaluation on the  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  dataset, the tau pair cross section is com-  
2216 puted as a weighted average corresponding to the different dataset energies, which is  
2217 actually equal to  $0.919 \text{ nb}$ .

This calculation is cross-checked using the Feldman Cousin interval [127], which is 2.44, assuming 0 observed events. Without taking the uncertainties into account, the



4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.5. Branching fraction upper-limit estimation

upper limit is then

$$\mathcal{B}_{UL,exp}^{90}(\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\mu) = \frac{s^{90}}{2 \times L \times \sigma_{\tau^+\tau^-} \times \epsilon_{\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\mu}} = 1.56 \times 10^{-8}, \quad (4.39)$$

2218 for  $424 fb^{-1}$ .

## Conclusion

2219

2220 In this thesis, I presented the search for lepton flavour violating  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  decays  
2221 using  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \tau^+ \tau^-$  events in the  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  of data collected by the Belle II experiment  
2222 between 2019 to 2022. This analysis is based on a novel-untagged reconstruction,  
2223 where only the signal  $\tau^-$  produced in  $e^+ e^- \rightarrow \tau^+ \tau^-$  events is reconstructed, the other  
2224 tau being left unconstrained. With this approach, the goal is to increase the efficiency  
2225 of the signal by allowing all the decay in one or three charged particles. Such inclusive  
2226 reconstruction also allows events with additional or missing tracks. With this strategy,  
2227 the amount of background is increased. To remove it, we use a three-step optimized  
2228 selection process to reject it. This involves a selection based on the lepton identifica-  
2229 tion variable, a preliminary cut-based selection, and finally, a boosted-decision-tree  
2230 classifier to eliminate any remaining  $q\bar{q}$  continuum backgrounds. The rejection was  
2231 optimised using Monte Carlo simulation samples to maximise the background rejec-  
2232 tion and signal efficiency inside the signal region. The signal region corresponds to an  
2233 ellipse with a semi-axis equal to three times the resolution of the expected signal peak  
2234 in the  $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$  plane. The estimated upper limit at a 90% confidence level on the  
2235 branching fractions of the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  channel is computed using the  $CL_s$  method.  
2236 Input ingredients are the signal efficiency on MC samples, the estimated number  
2237 of data computed with the "ABCD" method and the estimated uncertainties. The  
2238 expected upper limits before full unblinding are estimated for  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  and  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ .

2239 Following the method described previously, the efficiency of the signal is increased  
2240 by a factor of 2.5 with respect to the Belle analysis[8], and 1.4 to a Belle II study  
2241 relying on a "classical" reconstruction with only one charged particle in the tag side  
2242 and a cut-based background rejection. At the same time, the number of expected  
2243 background events is compatible with 0 for the three studies. With these performances  
2244 on signal efficiency and background rejection, the expected upper limit on  $\tau^- \rightarrow$   
2245  $\mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  branching fraction is  $1.77 \times 10^{-8}$  using  $324 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  and  $1.51 \times 10^{-8}$  using  $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ .  
2246 The strategy of untagged reconstruction plus BDT background rejection, described in  
2247 this thesis, leads to an improvement of about 20% to the current most stringent limit  
2248 measured by Belle at  $2.1 \times 10^{-8}$  using  $782 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ .

2249 The Belle II experiment has completed its first data-taking phase in 2022 and is now  
2250 undergoing a long shutdown to install upgrades. The collisions are planned to resume  
2251 in early 2024 for the second data-taking phase, which plans to collect at least  $5 \text{ ab}^{-1}$   
2252 by 2027, as shown in Figure 4.27. The experiment will end with a dataset ranging  
2253 from  $25 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  to  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  due to various scenarios about the instantaneous luminosity  
2254 increase. The upper limits at the target integrated luminosities (5, 25 and  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ )  
2255 are estimated by the  $CL_s$  method with as input: the signal efficiency 19.7% and the  
2256 expected number of data renormalized to the target luminosity. Respectively the

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – 4.5. Branching fraction upper-limit estimation

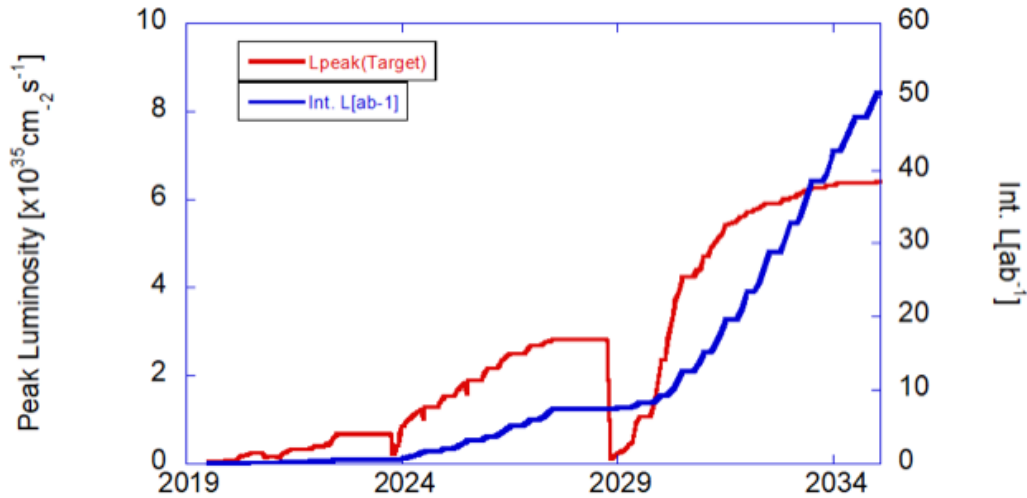


Figure 4.27. – The future projection for the instantaneous (red) and integrated (blue) luminosity until reaching the  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$  scenario in 2035. Credits [99]

2257 estimated upper limits are  $1.3 \times 10^{-9}$ ,  $2.7 \times 10^{-10}$  and  $1.3 \times 10^{-10}$  at 5, 25 and  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ .  
 2258 We can notice that the estimated upper limit is a linear function of the luminosity, and  
 2259 it is better than estimation [128, 67] at  $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ .

2260 In the upcoming year, Belle II will be a leader in tau LFV searches while considering  
 2261 the rise in luminosity and possible improvements, *e.g.* lepton identification based  
 2262 on machine learning alternatives, triggers and simulation description. In addition,  
 2263 the reconstruction and background rejection strategy has room for improvement  
 2264 by making the classifier more robust by training on a bigger sample or using more  
 2265 complex classifiers. A final room for improvement might be using a fitting procedure  
 2266 to count the number of expected data.

2267 On a more long-term perspective, the future of tau LFV searches is covered by the  
 2268  $e^+e^-$  colliders for Super Charm and Tau factories, developed in Novosibirsk [129],  
 2269 Russia and in Hefei, China [130] with high  $\tau^-\tau^+$  production. We also notice the  
 2270 proposal for a fixed target experiment to study  $\tau$  LFV decays [131]. The goal of those  
 2271 experiments is to reach upper limits at the level of  $10^{-10}$ . Considering the estimations  
 2272 of future experimental sensitivities, we can expect to observe LFV decays if the physics  
 2273 beyond the SM is described by models such as Little Higgs T-Parity, Supersymmetry or  
 2274  $Z'$  bosons.

2275 In addition, this thesis also presents the first measurement of the vertex detector  
 2276 spatial resolution with a method exploiting overlapping sensors. The  $e^+e^- \rightarrow \mu^+\mu^-$   
 2277 data events are selected to keep only the case where a particle has left two hits in the  
 2278 same detector layer. The method estimates the spatial resolution from the difference  
 2279 of the residuals measured in the two layers, allowing it to cancel out tracking error and  
 2280 Coulomb scattering effects. The spatial resolution is measured between  $16 \mu\text{m}$  and  
 2281  $35 \mu\text{m}$ , depending on the layer and the sensor side. The resolution is consistent with  
 2282 other methods implemented at Belle II.

# 2283 APPENDICES

## 2284 A. SVD cluster position resolution

### 2285 A.1. Assumption on the track's true residuals

2286 Examining the simulation, the assumption that "track extrapolation error can be  
2287 used as an estimate of the standard deviation of the track's true residuals" is not  
2288 entirely accurate. The track extrapolation pulls<sup>5</sup> do not have a unit width. As depicted  
2289 in Figure 28, the tracking error is underestimated by approximately 10% on average.  
2290 This suggests that certain entries in the tails considerably widen the pulls.

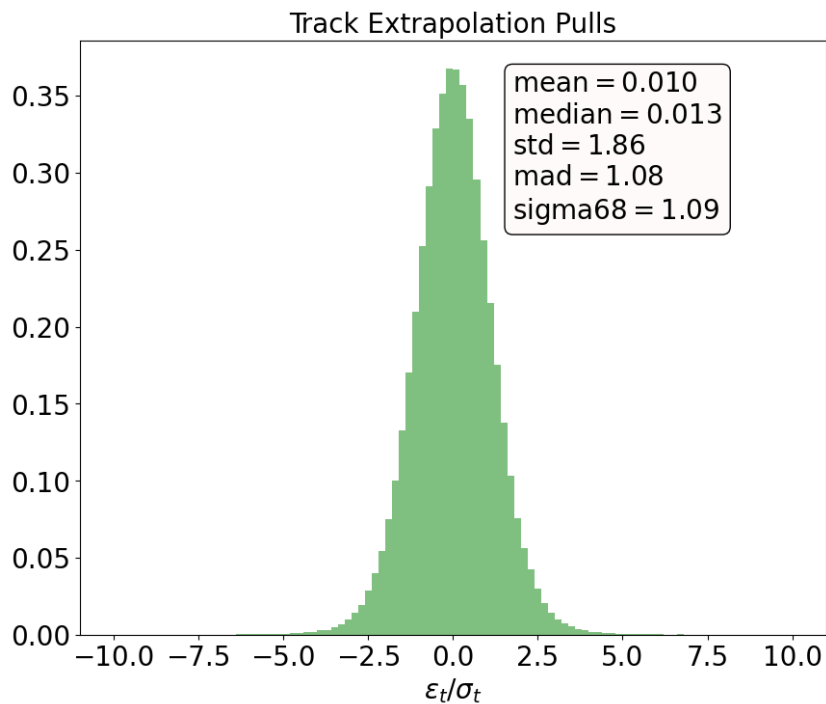


Figure 28. – Layer 4 u/P side track position extrapolation pulls  $\epsilon_t/\sigma_t$ . Credits [110]

2291 As there is no clear method to rectify the estimated track extrapolation error to  
2292 align with the track extrapolation resolution, and since the number of tracks with  
2293 considerably incorrect errors is low, we will proceed with the assumption that the  
2294 estimated track error ( $\sigma_t$ ) is a reliable estimator of the true track error's sigma ( $\epsilon_t$ ).

---

5. Pulls is the ratio between true residuals and estimated error.

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

2295 Consequently, we have  $E[\varepsilon_t^2] = E[\sigma_t^2] = E[\sigma_t]^2 + Var(\sigma_t)$ . It has to be noticed that  $\sigma_t$   
 2296 and  $\varepsilon_t$  have distinct distributions. While  $\varepsilon_t$  is centred at zero,  $\sigma_t$  is not. However, if we  
 2297 draw  $\varepsilon_t$  from a Gaussian distribution with a sigma equal to the  $\sigma_t$  of the corresponding  
 2298 event, it would work for each event.

### 2299 A.2. The true cluster resolution

The true resolution is defined from the eq. 3.7 by assuming that  $E[\varepsilon_m] = 0$ , as:

$$\sigma_{true}^2 \equiv E[\varepsilon_m^2] = E[\varepsilon_m]^2 + Var(\varepsilon_m) = Var(\varepsilon_m). \quad (.40)$$

2300 As shown in Figure 3.3 and 29, it is evident that the distribution of the true residual  $\varepsilon_m$   
 2301 is not Gaussian. Instead, it has two components: a narrow component representing  
 2302 accurately measured clusters, easily described by a Gaussian distribution, and a wider  
 2303 component, characterized by large tails, describing clusters with poorer resolution.  
 2304 The choice of the measure of the  $\varepsilon_m$  variance (std, sigma-68) must be carefully  
 2305 considered to adequately address the two regimes presented by the  $\varepsilon_m$  distribution.

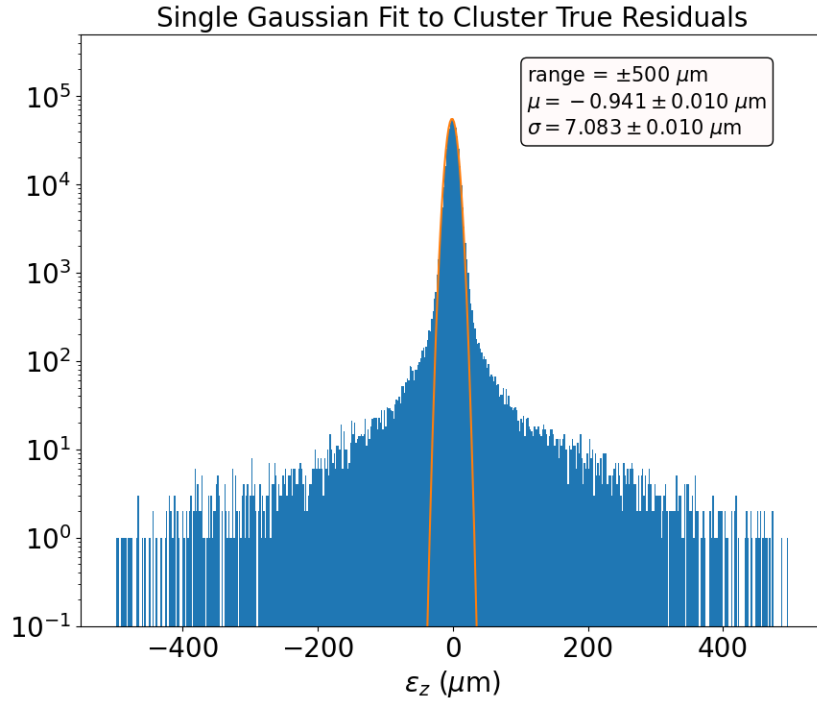


Figure 29. – Layer 4 u/P side true cluster residual normalized distributions, fitted with a single-gaussian for different ranges. Credits [110]

2306 In the Gaussian case, the standard deviation ( $\text{std} = \sqrt{\frac{\sum_{i=1}^N (y - \text{mean}(y))^2}{N-1}}$ ) is a reliable  
 2307 measure of how spread out the data is. However, it can be influenced by extreme  
 2308 values and outliers. An alternative measure that is more robust in large tails is the 68%

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

2309 coverage sigma (sigma-68), calculated by taking half the difference between the 84th  
 2310 and 16th quantiles. See Figure 30 for a comparison of the estimators in the function of  
 2311 the range of the distributions.

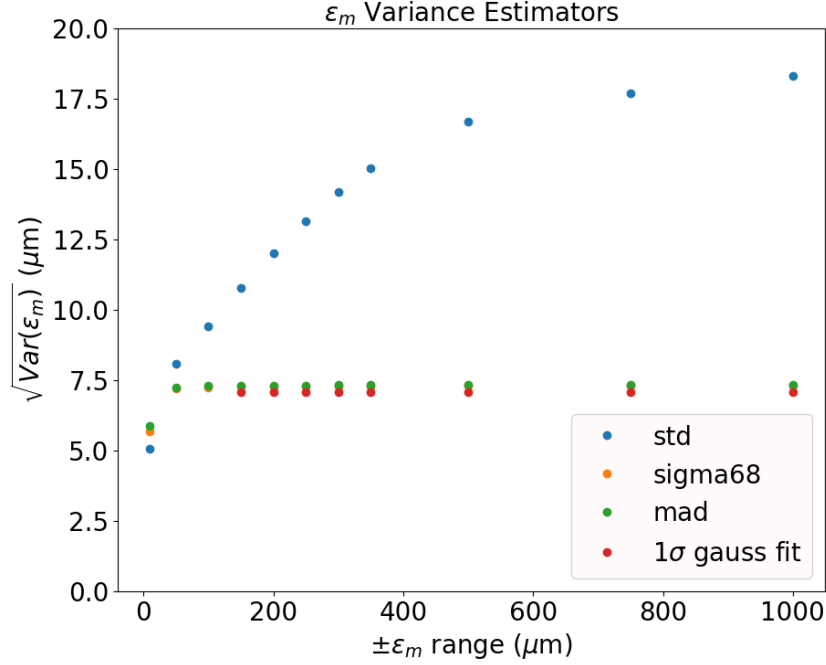


Figure 30. – Estimators of the square root of the variance of the true position residual for Layer 4 u/P side clusters as a function of the  $\epsilon_m$  ranges, from  $\pm 30 \mu\text{m}$  to  $\pm 1 \text{ mm}$ . Credits [110]

We chose the 68% coverage sigma estimator, denoted by sigma-68, because it is more robust against large tails than the standard deviation. As a result, the definition of the true resolution has been established.

$$\sigma_{true}^2 = E[\epsilon_m^2] \simeq \text{sigma-68}^2(\epsilon_m) = 7,3 \mu\text{m}, \quad (.41)$$

2312 The calculation was performed using the entire range of  $\epsilon_m$ . It's worth noting that this  
 2313 value is actually better than the estimated value based on the pitch (11  $\mu\text{m}$ ) listed in  
 2314 Table 2.3, which was expected.

### 2315 A.3. Definition of the cluster position resolution with overlap 2316 method

To find the relation between the double residual  $\Delta R$  and the cluster position resolution  $\sigma_{cl}$ , we have to develop the variance of  $\Delta R$  similarly to work done in Section 3.1.2,

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

as:

$$Var(\Delta R) = Var\left(\frac{R_i - R_e}{\sqrt{2}}\right) \quad (42)$$

$$= \frac{1}{2}E\left[\left((m_i - x_i) - (m_e - x_e) - (t_i - x_i) + (t_e - x_e)\right)^2\right] \quad (43)$$

$$= \frac{1}{2}E\left[(\varepsilon_{m_i} - \varepsilon_{m_e} - \varepsilon_{t_i} + \varepsilon_{t_e})^2\right] \quad (44)$$

$$, \quad (45)$$

2317 By developing the square sum:

$$\begin{aligned} (\varepsilon_{m_i} - \varepsilon_{m_e} - \varepsilon_{t_i} + \varepsilon_{t_e})^2 &= \varepsilon_{m_i}^2 + \varepsilon_{m_e}^2 \\ &+ \varepsilon_{t_i}^2 + \varepsilon_{t_e}^2 - 2\varepsilon_{t_i}\varepsilon_{t_e} \end{aligned} \quad (46)$$

$$\begin{aligned} &- 2\varepsilon_{m_i}\varepsilon_{m_e} - 2\varepsilon_{m_i}\varepsilon_{t_i} + 2\varepsilon_{m_i}\varepsilon_{t_e} + 2\varepsilon_{m_e}\varepsilon_{t_i} - 2\varepsilon_{m_e}\varepsilon_{t_e}, \\ &= \varepsilon_{m_i}^2 + \varepsilon_{m_e}^2 \\ &+ (\varepsilon_{t_i} - \varepsilon_{t_e})^2 \end{aligned} \quad (47)$$

$$- 2\varepsilon_{m_i}\varepsilon_{m_e} - 2\varepsilon_{m_i}\varepsilon_{t_i} + 2\varepsilon_{m_i}\varepsilon_{t_e} + 2\varepsilon_{m_e}\varepsilon_{t_i} - 2\varepsilon_{m_e}\varepsilon_{t_e}.$$

As seen in Section 3.1.2, we assume that each mixing term  $E[\varepsilon_m \varepsilon_t] = 0$  and also  $E[\varepsilon_{m_i} \varepsilon_{m_e}] = 0$ . The variance of the double residual becomes:

$$2Var(\Delta R) = E\left[(\varepsilon_{m_i})^2\right] + E\left[(\varepsilon_{m_e})^2\right] + E\left[(\varepsilon_{t_i} - \varepsilon_{t_e})^2\right], \quad (48)$$

$$= \sigma_{cl}^2 + \sigma_{cl}^2 + E\left[(\sigma_{t_i} - \sigma_{t_e})^2\right]. \quad (49)$$

By using overlapping sensors, we assume that any tracking error between the two ladders is eliminated, resulting in a value of zero for the expected square of the difference between the internal and external ladder errors,  $E\left[(\sigma_{t_i} - \sigma_{t_e})^2\right] = 0$ . Finally, the overlap method determines the cluster position resolution as the double residual variance:

$$\sigma_{cl}^2 = Var(\Delta R). \quad (50)$$

#### 2318 A.4. Geometrical corrections of residuals

2319 The overlap method assumes that both residuals are measured in the same plane,  
2320 which is not the case for the [Silicon Vertex Detector \(SVD\)](#) because of its windmill  
2321 architecture (refer to Figure 3.5). The SVD layout has a large angle ( $i$ ) between two  
2322 consecutive ladders, which affects the track incident angles ( $a_i$  and  $a_e$ ) for rectangular-  
2323 barrel sensors. To properly compare residuals measured on the same plane, the  
2324 projection of the external residual onto the internal ladder is computed. This study  
2325 does not consider forward-slanted sensors, which add more complexity because of  
2326 their non-zero polar angle.

2327 On the u/P Side, the pairs of residual could be represented in  $r\phi$  projection, as

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

2328 shown in Figure 31. By drawing a plane parallel to the internal ladder passing by  
 2329 the external cluster position, a triangle is formed between the parallel internal plane,  
 2330 external ladder and the tracks.

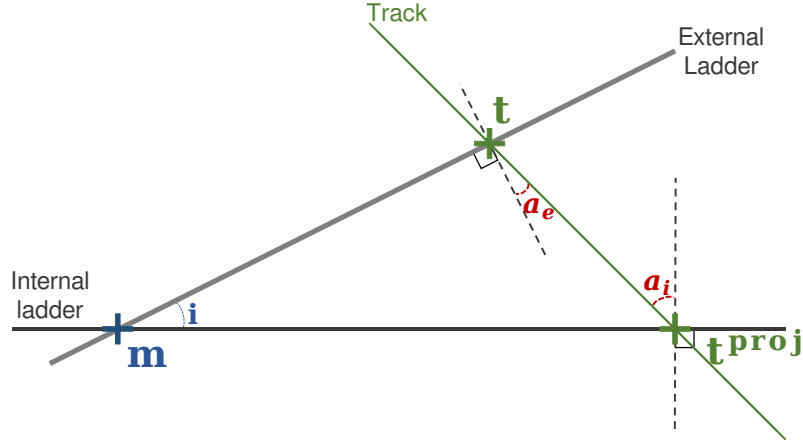


Figure 31. – Schematic view in the  $r\phi$ -direction of the external residual onto a parallel plane to the internal ladder parallel to the tracks.

Using the sine law in the above triangle allows us to calculate the projection of the external residual:

$$\frac{|t - t^{proj}|}{\sin(i)} = \frac{|m - t|}{\sin(\pi/2 - a_i)} = \frac{|m - t^{proj}|}{\sin(\pi/2 + a_e)}, \quad (.51)$$

$$\frac{|t - t^{proj}|}{\sin(i)} = \frac{R_e}{\cos(a_i)} = \frac{R_e^{proj}}{\cos(a_e)}. \quad (.52)$$

By defining a correction factor  $C$  and re-normalizing event by event, the double residual  $\Delta R$  could be defined in the u/P side by:

$$\Delta R = \frac{R_i - CR_e}{\sqrt{1 + C^2}}, \quad (.53)$$

with:

$$C = \frac{\cos(a_e)}{\cos(a_i)}. \quad (.54)$$

2331 On the v/N Side, the geometrical correction does take into account the 3D geometry  
 2332 of the SVD because the two ladders can't be represented in the same plane following  
 2333 the v/N side.



4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

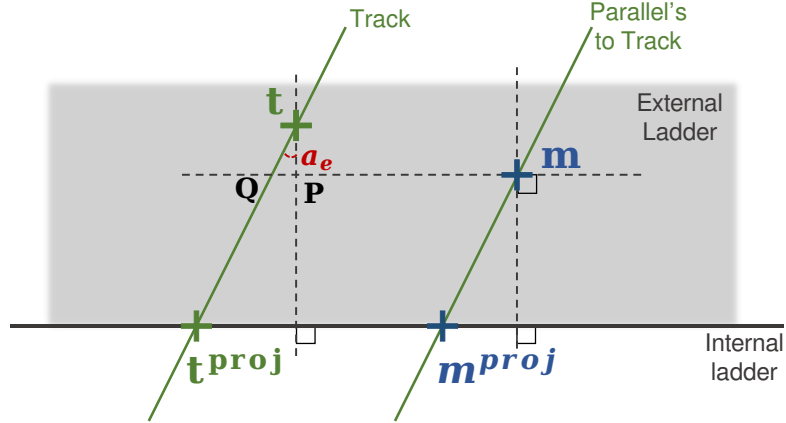


Figure 32. – Schematic view in the  $z$ -direction, orthogonal to the internal ladder, of the external residual onto a parallel plane to the internal ladder parallel to the tracks.

In Figure 32, the situation can be effectively represented by a plane that is perpendicular to the internal ladder. This enables us to define the projection of the external ladder residual as  $R_e^{proj} = m^{proj} - t^{proj}$ , while the external residual is defined by  $R_e = m - P$ , instead of  $m - t$ , to account for the removal of the u/P contribution. As a result, the projection can be divided into two contributions  $R_e$  and the QP length, as:

$$R_e^{proj} = R_e + |Q - P| \quad (.55)$$

$$= R_e + |t - P| \tan(a_e) \quad (.56)$$

The distance between  $t$  and P, is the projection of the u/P external residual on our viewing plane, Figure 33, and is  $\sin(i) R_e^{u/P}$ . So:

$$R_e^{proj} = R_e + R_e^{u/P} \sin(i) \tan(a_e), \quad (.57)$$

and the double residual  $\Delta R$  in the v/N side becomes:

$$\Delta R = \frac{R_i - (R_e + R_e^{u/P} \sin(i) \tan(a_e))}{\sqrt{2}}. \quad (.58)$$

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

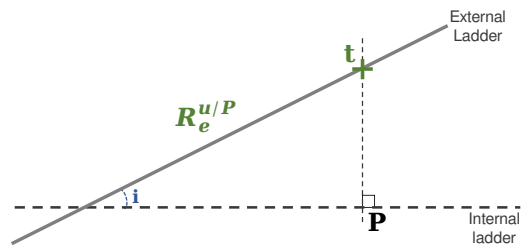


Figure 33. – Projection of the u/P external residual contribution in the v/N projection view 32.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

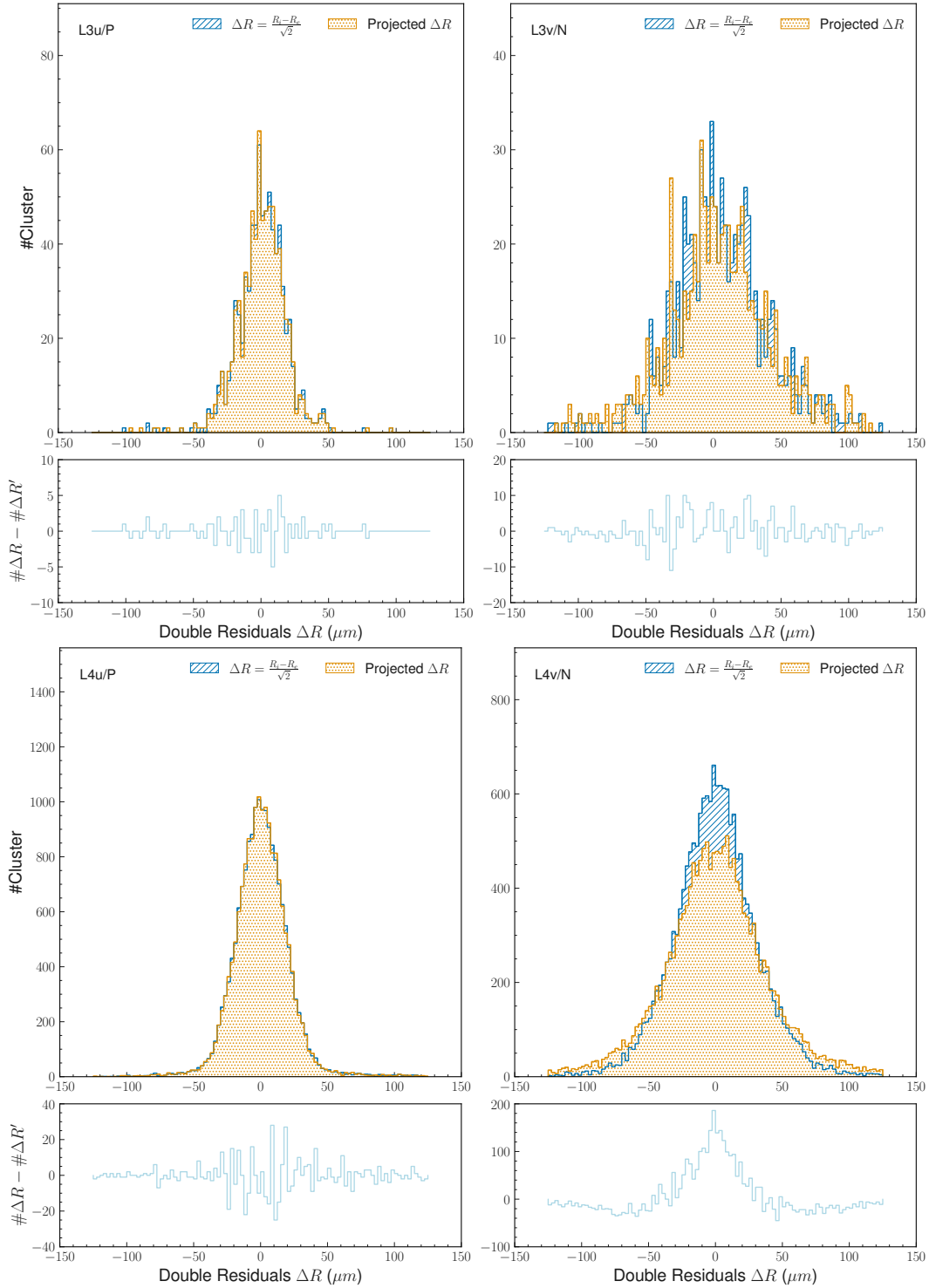


Figure 34. – Double residuals distribution without (red) and with (blue) the geometrical correction at the top, and the height bin difference between both of the distributions at the bottom. The correction does not affect the distribution so much because the correction factors are close to one.

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

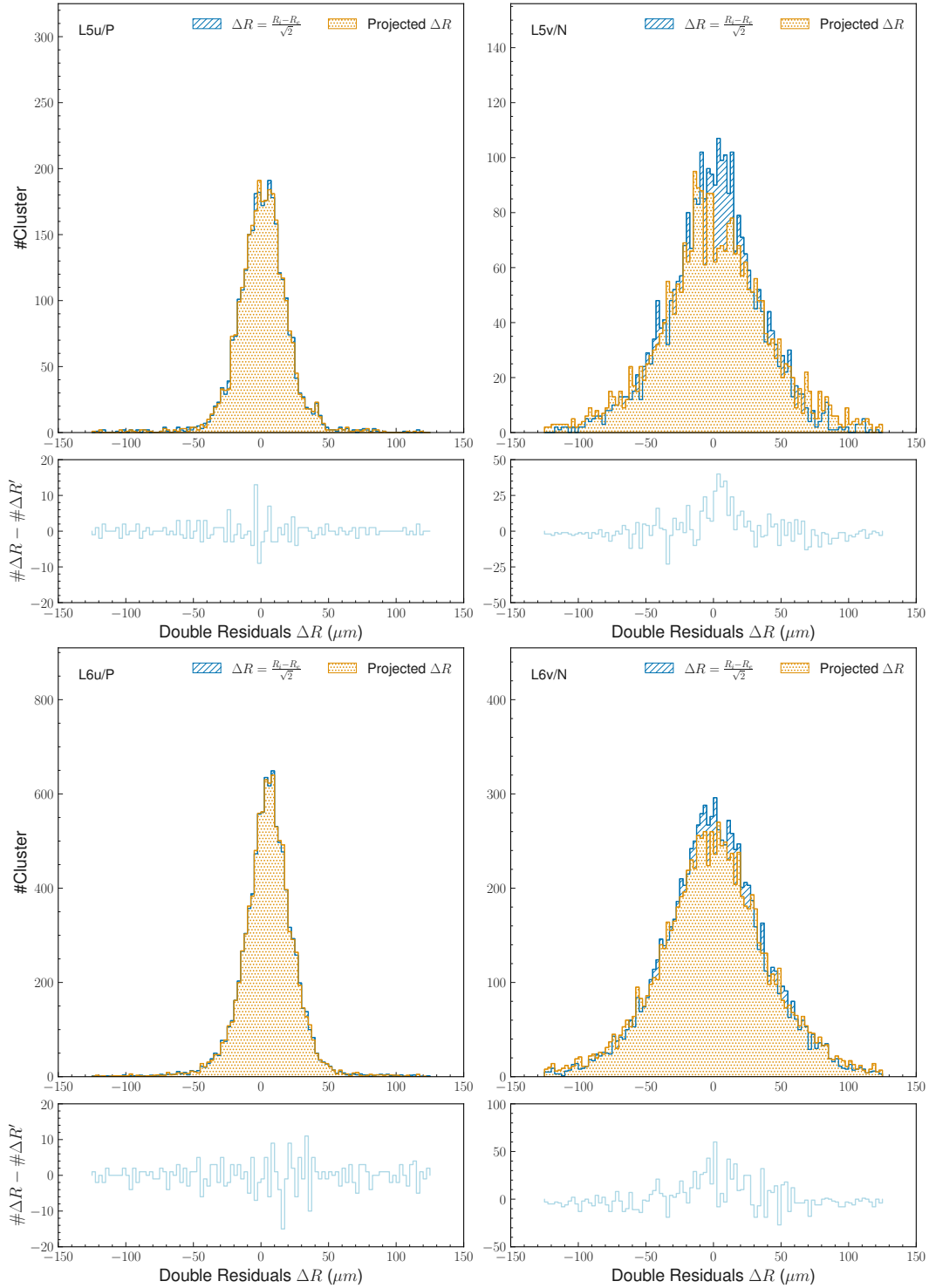


Figure 34. – Double residuals distribution without (red) and with (blue) the geometrical correction at the top, and the height bin difference between both of the distributions at the bottom. The correction does not affect the distribution so much because the correction factors are close to one.

## 2334 A.5. Overlapping method discrepancy checks

2335 The assumption motivating the overlap method is that the errors on the track  
 2336 extrapolation cancel out in the double residuals, but this might not be the case due  
 2337 to the dependence on the track incident angle and the non-trivial projection of the  
 2338 external residuals onto the internal ladder.

### 2339 A.5.1. Extrapolated track error cancellation

2340 Our first check aims to verify this possibility. We show in Figure 35 the difference  
 2341 between the errors on the intercepts  $\Delta\sigma_t$  for the internal and external residuals on the  
 2342 simulation samples: the plotted distributions have a non-null mean and respectively  
 2343 a width of  $\sim 0.5 \mu\text{m}$  for u/P and  $\sim 5 \mu\text{m}$  for v/N, which points to a non-complete  
 2344 cancellation of the track errors in pair method. However, we observed that on simulation,  
 2345 this effect is of the order of  $\sim \sqrt{2} \times 0.5(5) \sim 1(8) \mu\text{m}$  for u/P (v/N) side and cannot  
 2346 fully explain the discrepancy with respect to other methods. From this study, we  
 2347 conclude the non-cancellation of the track errors cannot be the only responsible for  
 2348 the observed differences.

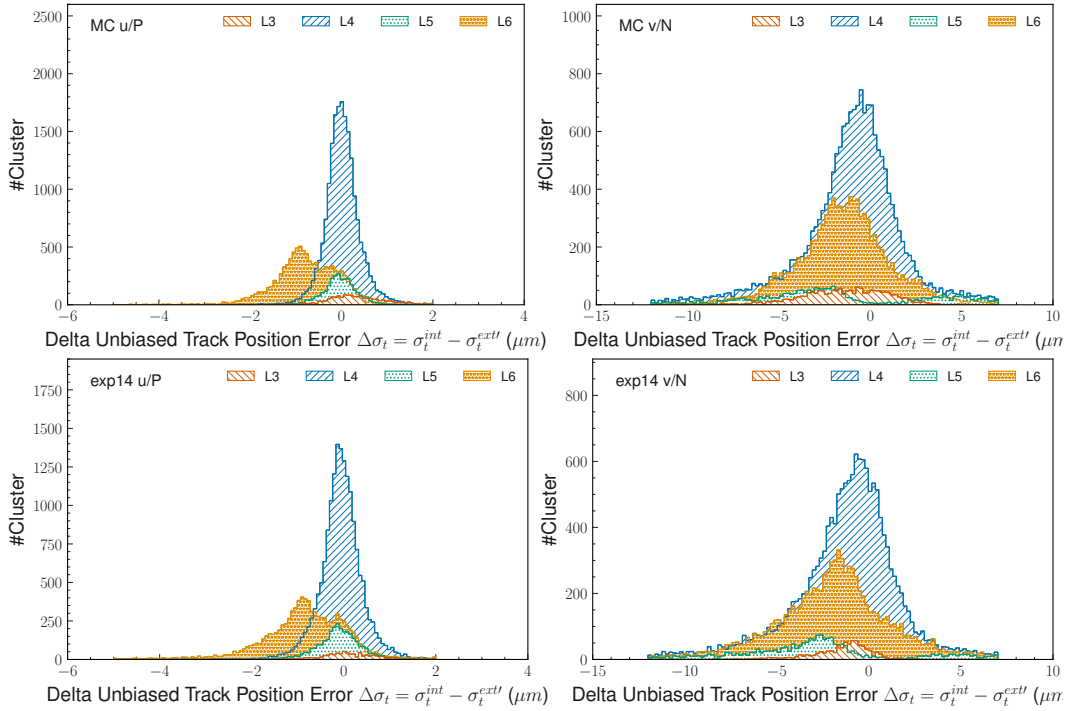


Figure 35. – Difference between internal and external unbiased track position error for each side and layer for simulated samples, top for MC samples and data in the bottom plots. Geometrical correction is applied when subtracting the external track error.

2349 **A.5.2. Double residual decomposition**

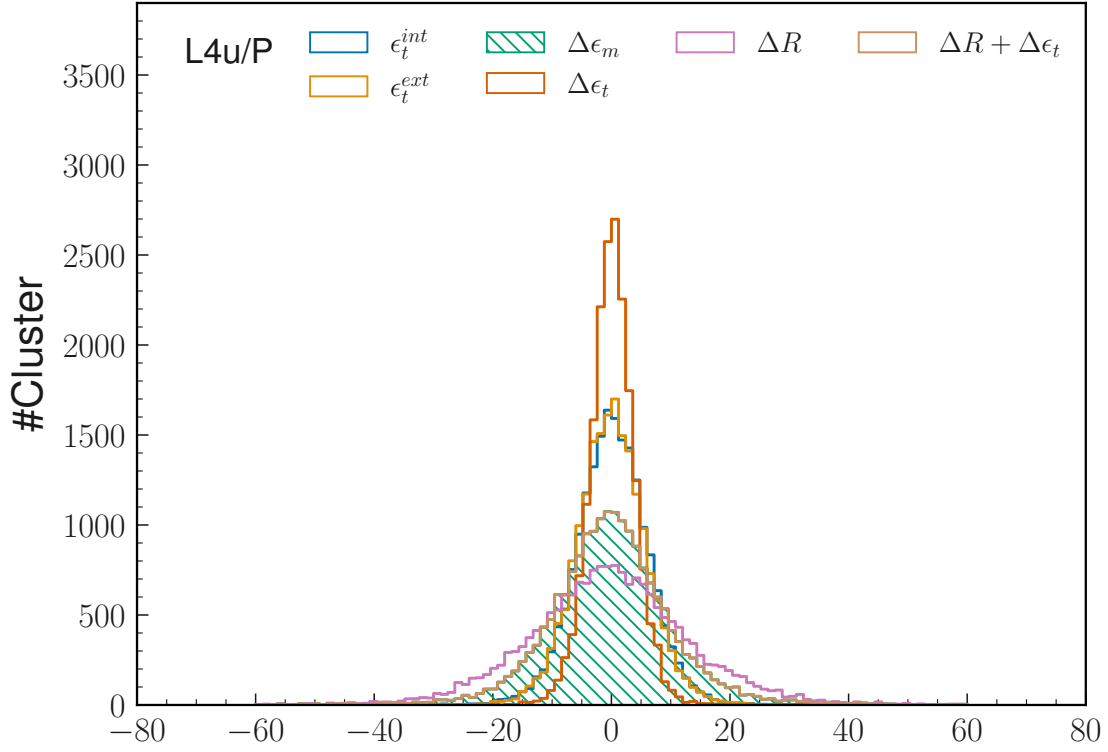


Figure 36. – Comparison between: double true residual  $\Delta\epsilon_m$ , double track residual  $\Delta\epsilon_t$ , double residual  $\Delta R$ , and the sum of double track residual and double residual.

Secondly, we investigate the decomposition of the double residuals as:

$$\Delta R = \Delta\epsilon_m - \Delta\epsilon_t \quad (.59)$$

and we want to check whether the following hypothesis is correct:

$$\text{Var}(\Delta R) = \text{Var}(\Delta\epsilon_m) + \text{Var}(\Delta\epsilon_t) \quad (.60)$$

The above equation, in fact, would imply:

$$\text{Var}(\Delta\epsilon_m) \stackrel{?}{=} \text{Var}(\Delta R) - \text{Var}(\Delta\epsilon_t) \quad (.61)$$

2350 and therefore, we could estimate the true resolution, here corresponding to the width  
 2351 of the double true residuals  $\Delta\epsilon_m$ , as the difference between the width of the double  
 2352 residual  $\sigma(\Delta R)$  and the width of the double true track residuals  $\Delta\epsilon_t$ , which needs to  
 2353 be computed from the simulation.

2354 This study is performed on simulation since it's the only place where we can access  
 2355 the true residuals  $\Delta\epsilon_t$ . We select layer 4 on the u/P side, which is the one with a larger

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – A. SVD cluster position resolution

2356 acceptance region and higher statistics available for the test. In Figure 36, it is shown  
 2357 that the decomposition of equation .59 holds, but the relation among the widths of the  
 2358 single distributions instead (equation .60) is not satisfied, as reported in the table 20.  
 2359 Therefore, the left side of equation .61 computed as the width of  $\Delta\epsilon_m$  doesn't equal  
 2360 the difference between the widths of  $\Delta R$  and  $\Delta\epsilon_t$ , and the correct expression of the  
 2361 previous relation needs to account for the correlation between  $\Delta\epsilon_m$  and  $\Delta\epsilon_t$  with the  
 2362 additional covariance term:

$$Var(\Delta R) = Var(\Delta\epsilon_m) + Var(\Delta\epsilon_t) - 2Cov(\Delta\epsilon_m, \Delta\epsilon_t) \quad (.62)$$

This time we check the relation:

$$Var(\Delta\epsilon_m) \stackrel{?}{=} Var(\Delta R) - Var(\Delta\epsilon_t) + 2Cov(\Delta\epsilon_m, \Delta\epsilon_t) \quad (.63)$$

$$81.18 \stackrel{?}{=} 144.36 + 2 \times (-28.41) \quad (.64)$$

$$81.18 \simeq 87.54 \quad (.65)$$

2363 which from the numerical results reported in the table20 holds within a  $\sim 6 (\mu\text{m})^2$   
 2364 difference. The observed correlation between  $\Delta\epsilon_m$  and  $\Delta\epsilon_t$  hasn't been observed  
 2365 with the other methods and could be explained by the fact that the track fit is not  
 2366 sufficiently unbiased. The correlation might be due to the fact that when the track  
 2367 intercept is computed for the external layer, the hit from the internal one is used,  
 2368 causing a correlation between  $\epsilon_m^{int}$  and  $\epsilon_t^{ext}$ , and similarly for the other couple  $\epsilon_m^{ext}$   
 2369 and  $\epsilon_t^{int}$ . A viable way to solve this would be to have a fully unbiased track fit that  
 2370 does not use any of the two hits, but it would require rerunning the track fit in the  
 2371 reconstruction of the data used, implying a complete reprocessing of the ntuple and  
 2372 not affordable at present as further offline check on the method.

2373 Estimating the true resolution as  $\sqrt{87.54} = 9.4 \mu\text{m}$  gives a result closer to what is  
 2374 measured in the other methods for the same layer 4, u/P side, but this correction is  
 2375 based on the MCTruth information from simulation and wouldn't be accessible on  
 2376 data. This would require further validation studies, and we do not think it is already  
 2377 applicable.

Table 20. – Position and width of the different double residuals, taken with the median and sigma-68 respectively in the MC sample for the Layer 4 u/P.

	median ( $\mu\text{m}$ )	sigma-68 ( $\mu\text{m}$ )
Internal track residual $\epsilon_t^{int}$	$0.14 \pm 0.00 \pm 0.02$	$5.74 \pm 0.06 \pm 0.05$
External track residual $\epsilon_t^{ext}$	$-0.01 \pm 0.00 \pm 0.01$	$5.58 \pm 0.06 \pm 0.03$
Delta true residual $\Delta\epsilon_m$	$-0.32 \pm 0.00 \pm 0.00$	$9.01 \pm 0.09 \pm 0.29$
Delta track residual $\Delta\epsilon_t$	$0.14 \pm 0.00 \pm 0.01$	$3.52 \pm 0.04 \pm 0.08$
Double residual $\Delta R$	$-0.44 \pm 0.00 \pm 0.05$	$12.52 \pm 0.13 \pm 0.40$

## 2378 B. L1 trigger lines definition

2379 In Chapter 4, we consider the ECL low-multiplicity trigger lines *lmlX* and some CDC  
 2380 lines, defined in Tables 21 and Table 22, respectively. Among all the *lmlX* and CDC  
 2381 trigger lines, we are only using the ones that were not prescaled during the data taking.  
 2382 Performance of the used triggers has been extensively studied within the Tau Working  
 2383 Group of Belle II in [123].

Table 21. – Definitions of L1 low-multiplicity trigger lines (*lmlX*) used in Chapter 4. The centre of the mass frame is referred as "CM".

Trigger line	ECL cluster(s)	Energy of cluster(s) $E$	Polar angle of cluster(s)	Opening angle in CM $\Delta\phi^{CM}$	Other requirements
<i>lml6</i>	1	$E^{CM} > 1\text{GeV}$	[32.2°; 128.7°]	-	no other cluster with $E > 300\text{MeV}$
<i>lml7</i>	1	$E^{CM} > 1\text{GeV}$	[18.5°; 31.9°] or [128.7°; 139.3°]	-	no other cluster with $E > 300\text{MeV}$
<i>lml8</i>	2	$E > 250\text{MeV}$	-	[170°; 190°]	no cluster with $E^{CM} > 2\text{GeV}$
<i>lml9</i>	2	$E > 250\text{MeV}$ $E < 250\text{MeV}$	-	[170°; 190°]	no cluster with $E^{CM} > 2\text{GeV}$
<i>lml10</i>	2	-	$\sum \theta^{CM} \in$ [160°; 200°]	[160°; 200°]	no cluster with $E^{CM} > 2\text{GeV}$
<i>lml12</i>	$\geq 3$	$\geq 1$ with $E > 500\text{MeV}$	[18.5°; 139.3°]	-	not an ECL Bhabha
<i>hie</i>	-	$E_{tot} > 1\text{GeV}$	-	-	not an ECL Bhabha

Table 22. – Definitions of L1 CDC trigger lines used in Chapter 4. The centre of the mass frame is referred as "CM".

Trigger line	Full track(s)	Short track(s)	Neuro 3D track(s) with $ z  < 20\text{cm}$	Opening angle $\Delta\phi$	Other requirements
<i>ffy</i>	$\geq 3$	-	$\geq 1$	-	-
<i>fyo</i>	$\geq 2$	-	$\geq 1$	$> 90^\circ$	not an ECL Bhabha



## C. Detailed background composition after cut-based preselections

Table 23. – Detailed background composition normalized to  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  after applying each set of preselection and LID requirements.

Name	Preselection	$\epsilon_{sig}^{rel}$ (%)	$\epsilon_{sig}^{abs}$ (%)	$\epsilon_{bkg}^{rel}$ (%)	$N_{bkg}$	$N_{\tau\text{-pair}}$	$N_{q\bar{q}}$	$N_{B\bar{B}}$	$N_{lowm}$	$N_{\gamma\gamma}$	$N_{ll}$	$N_{eell}$	$N_{eehh}$	$N_{\mu\mu ll}$	$N_{4\tau}$	$N_{hhISR}$
Reference	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$	96.88	31.11	89.99	938.82	3.08	287.52	0.00	648.22	0.00	49.29	44.32	0.00	554.61	0.00	0.00
Set 1	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $0.89 < Thrust < 0.97$	95.48	30.67	30.83	321.64	2.96	270.87	0.00	47.82	0.00	8.56	9.63	0.00	29.63	0.00	0.00
Set 2	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $0.935 < Thrust_{ROE\tau} < 0.95$	96.35	30.94	61.78	644.50	2.58	244.94	0.00	396.97	0.00	13.25	29.66	0.00	354.07	0.00	0.00
Set 3	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $E_{vis}^{CM} < 10.$	90.54	29.08	14.89	155.30	2.98	127.81	0.00	24.52	0.00	6.91	12.62	0.00	4.98	0.00	0.00
Set 4	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $E_{miss}^{CM} > 0.6$	90.22	28.98	14.69	153.29	2.91	125.85	0.00	24.52	0.00	6.91	12.62	0.00	4.98	0.00	0.00
Set 5	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $p_{miss}^{T,CM} > 0.4$	91.12	29.26	15.89	165.74	2.77	135.08	0.00	27.90	0.00	7.11	15.50	0.00	5.28	0.00	0.00
Set 6	$0.3 < \theta_{miss}^{CM} < 2.7$ $M_{ROE} < 2.2$ $-5. < \Delta E_{ROE} < -0.2$	90.76	29.15	16.49	172.08	2.62	106.08	0.00	63.39	0.00	14.34	22.93	0.00	26.11	0.00	0.00

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – D. Input BDT variables importance

2385 **D. Input BDT variables importance**

2386 The BDT input variables ranked by importance are given in Figure 37.

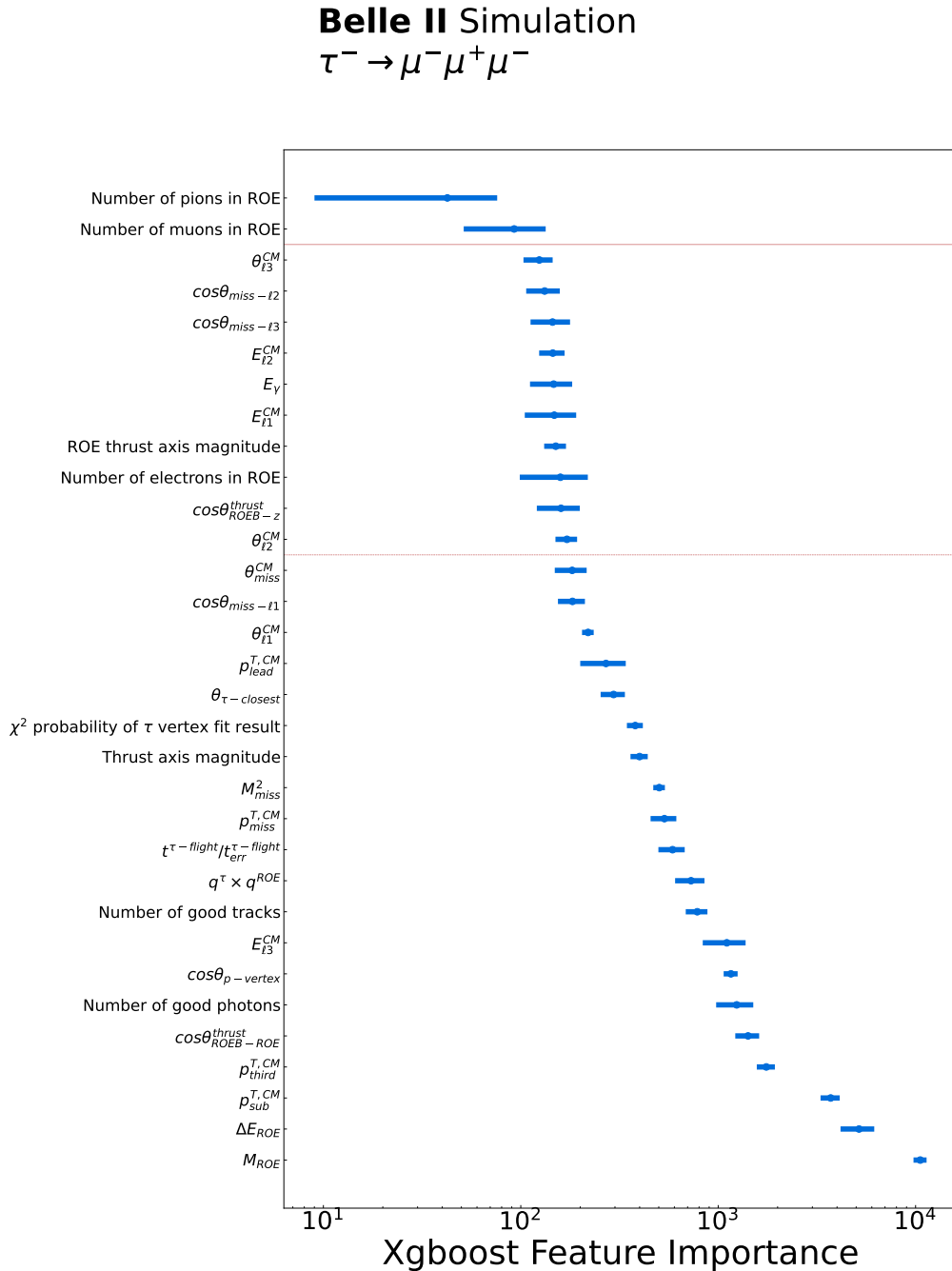


Figure 37. – Variables used as input to the BDT based background rejection for the  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  mode, ranked by their importance (best variable at the bottom) computed as "the average gain of splits which use the feature" [117].

2387 **E. Dalitz plots**

2388 To prevent the exclusion of a phase space region that may affect various **New Physics**  
 2389 **(NP)** model candidates for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  LFV decays, we examined the Dalitz plots  
 2390 shown in Figure 38. The region at low masses is unfavoured nevertheless, this feature  
 2391 is present before and after the background rejection.

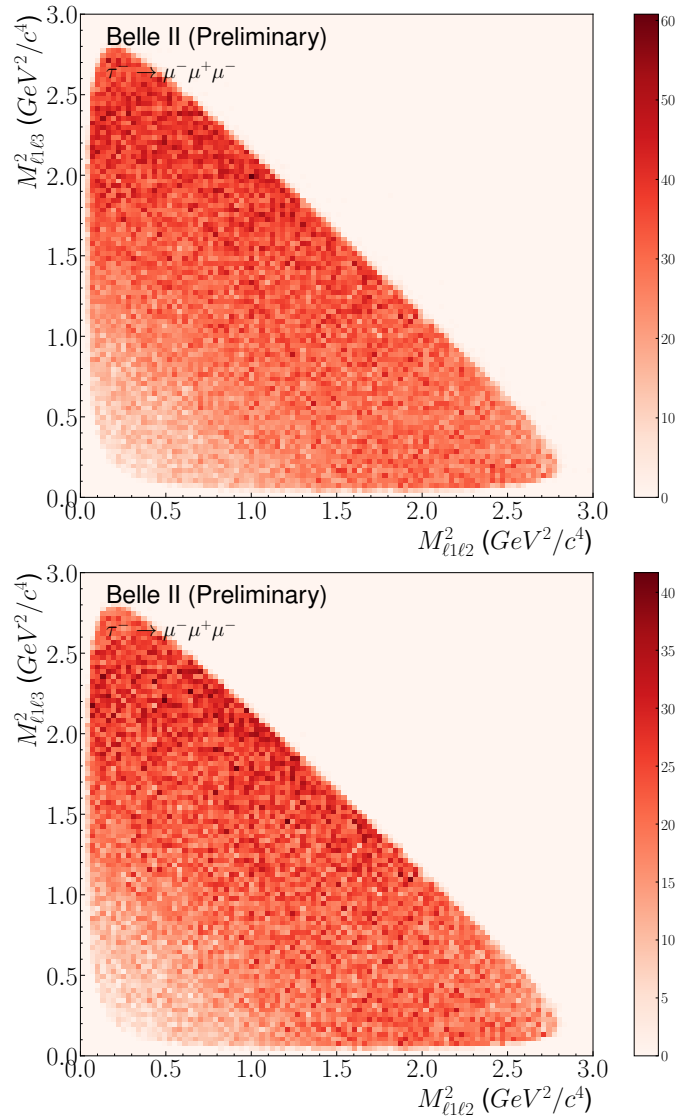


Figure 38. – Signal distribution in the 2D plane defined by the mass squared of the opposite charge muons. They are given after the reconstruction (top) and after the background rejection (bottom).

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – F. Data-MC Comparison  
in sidebands

4. Search for  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  lepton flavour violating decays – F. Data-MC Comparison in sidebands

2392 **F. Data-MC Comparison in sidebands**

2393 **F.1. After preselections**

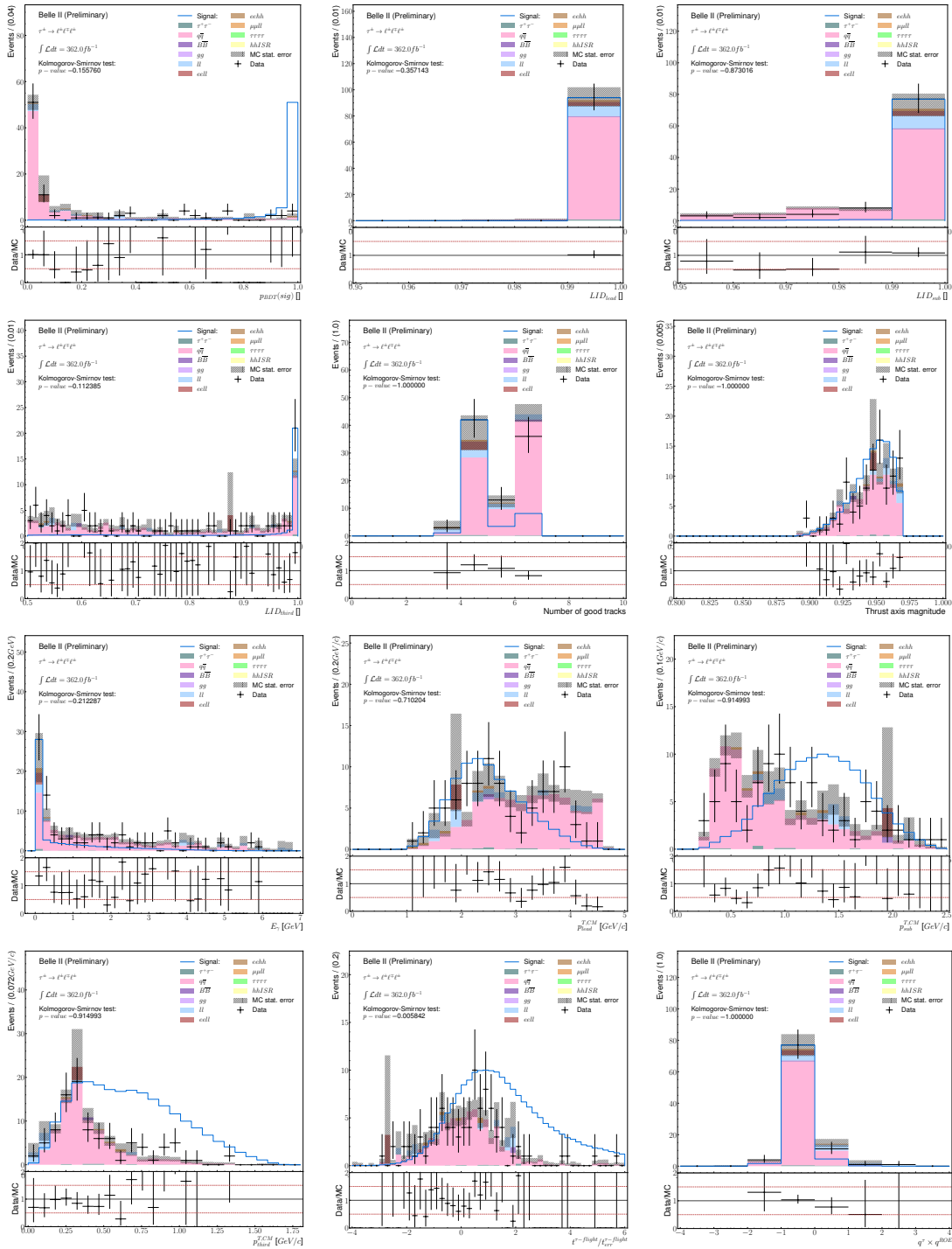


Figure 39. – Data-MC comparison in the 5 – 20(10) $\delta$  sidebands of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for **BDT** signal probability output, LID and variables are taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection.

#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – F. Data-MC Comparison in sidebands



Figure 39. – Data-MC comparison in the 5 – 20(10) $\delta$  sidebands of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for BDT signal probability output, LID and variables are taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection.







#### 4. Search for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ lepton flavour violating decays – F. Data-MC Comparison in sidebands

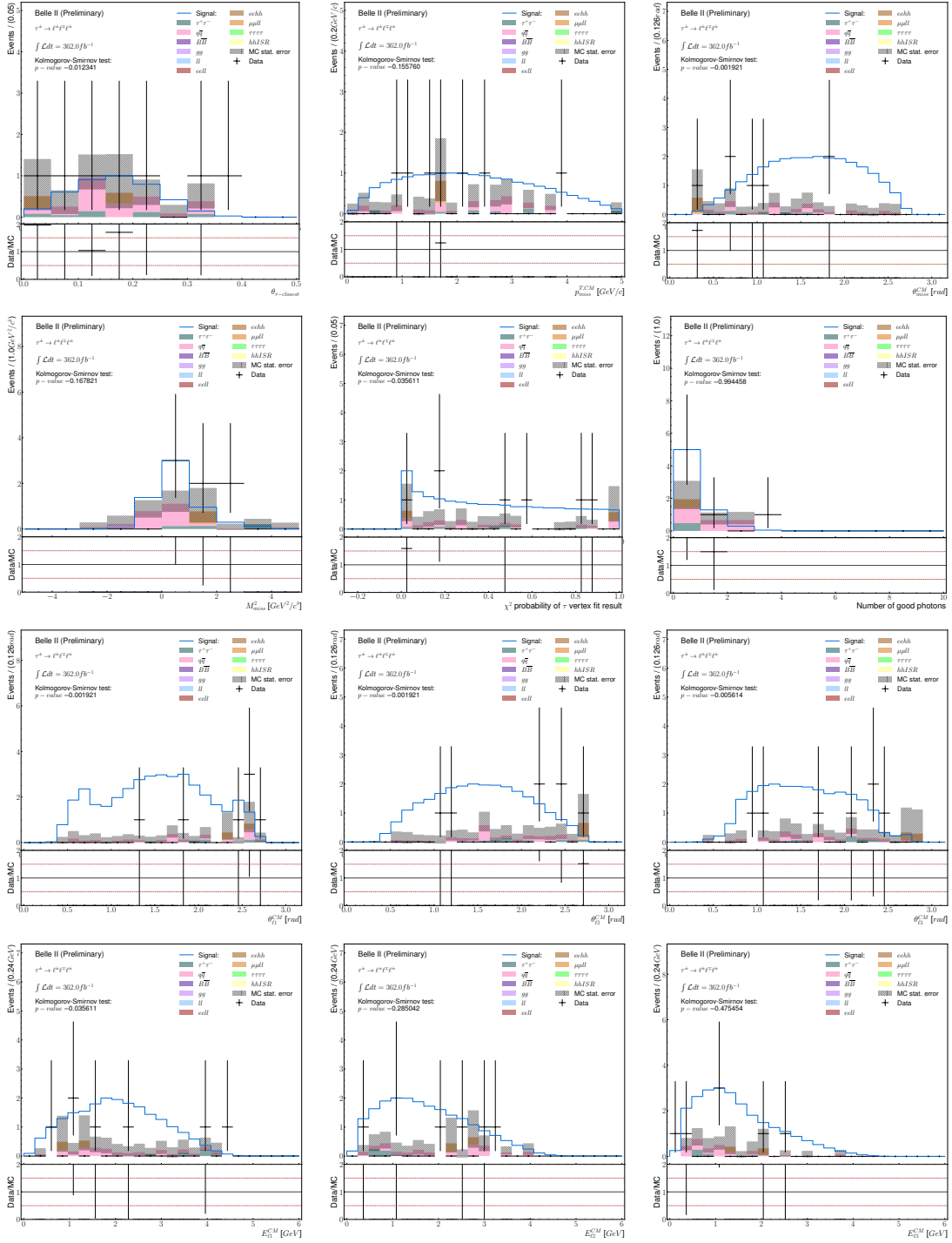


Figure 40. – Data-MC comparison in the 5 – 20(10) $\delta$  sidebands of reconstructed  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$  events for BDT signal probability  $\mu^+$  output, LID and variables taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection and BDT applied.



# List of Figures

2395

2396	1.	Limites supérieures sur les rapports d'embranchements de diverses désintégrations du tauon violant la saveur leptonique à un niveau de confiance de 90%, établies par les expériences CLEO, ATLAS, CMS, LHCb, BABAR et Belle, et estimées dans Belle II pour des luminosités intégrées de 5 (losanges verts) et 50 $\text{ab}^{-1}$ (carrés oranges). Extrait de [6]. . . . .	8
2397			
2398			
2399			
2400			
2401	2.	Vue transversale (direction $r\phi$ ) du SVD illustrant la structure en moulin et le recouvrement des modules dans une même couche (Gauche). Schémas des différentes positions et résidus liés à une activation d'un capteur (Droite). . . . .	12
2402			
2403			
2404			
2405	3.	La résolution spatiale des grappes (Gauche) et la résolution normalisée par l'espacement des bandes (Droite) sont calculées pour les côtés u/P et v/N de chaque couche du détecteur à partir de la méthode des recouvrements. . . . .	13
2406			
2407			
2408			
2409	4.	À gauche : Probabilité de vraisemblance au signal obtenue en sortie du BDT estimée sur les échantillons d'Entraînement et de Test dans une région du signal à $\pm 20\delta$ . Les deux graphiques du dessous représentent respectivement la figure de mérite de Punzi et les efficacités du signal (rouge) et de bruit de fond (bleue) en fonction de la valeur de coupure. La région verte représente la région gardée après coupure sur le BDT, cette région est optimisée pour maximiser la figure de mérite de Punzi dans l'échantillon de validation dans une région à $\pm 5\delta$ . À droite : Figure de mérite de Punzi (cyan), efficacité du signal (rouge) et nombre de bruits de fond survivant (bleue) pour les échantillons d'Entraînement et de Test pour les différentes combinaisons de présélection et de BDT. . . . .	19
2410			
2411			
2412			
2413			
2414			
2415			
2416			
2417			
2418			
2419			
2420			
2421	5.	Distribution des Événements de données (noir) et de bruit de fond simulés (bleu) survivants aux sélections de rejet du bruit de fond dans le plan de la distance elliptique au pic ( $M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu}$ ) et de la variable de sortie du BDT. Le lignage rouge délimite les différentes régions ABCD de la méthode. Les données restent dissimulées dans la région D. . . . .	20
2422			
2423			
2424			
2425			
2426	6.	$CL_s$ attendu en fonction de la limite supérieure sur les rapports d'embranchement de $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ pour une luminosité de 362 $\text{fb}^{-1}$ à droite et 424 $\text{fb}^{-1}$ à gauche. La droite horizontale rouge dénote un niveau de confiance à 90%. . . . .	21
2427			
2428			
2429			

2430	1.1. Summary of the elementary particles featured in the Standard Model, along with their respective properties such as mass, charge, and spin. Three generations of fermions have been identified, ordered by their respective masses. The first generation is stable and comprises all of the matter that surrounds us. Credits [32] . . . . .	30
2431		
2432		
2433		
2434		
2435	1.2. Schemes of the strategies to search for new physics beyond the standard model. . . . .	35
2436		
2437	1.3. Feynman diagram the for $u$ to $d$ transition (left) in the weak interaction charged currents, responsible for the $\beta$ radioactive decay in atoms' nuclei. $\mu^-$ decays to $e^-$ with the emission of neutrinos through the weak interaction (right). . . . .	36
2438		
2439		
2440		
2441	1.4. Examples of $\tau^-$ leptons decay with the conservation of the lepton numbers between initial and final states (left), and in the case where the lepton numbers are not conserved, called Lepton Flavour Violation (right). 37	
2442		
2443		
2444	1.5. Proportion of neutrino in the function of the distance of propagation. The black, blue and red curves are, respectively the proportion of electron neutrino, muon neutrino and tau neutrino. Credits [42] . . . . .	38
2445		
2446		
2447	1.6. Feynman diagrams for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ decays in the presence of neutrino oscillations with $Z^0$ -Penguin contribution (right) and box diagrams contribution (left). . . . .	40
2448		
2449		
2450	1.7. Example Feynman diagrams leading to $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ in the Littlest Higgs model with T-parity. . . . .	42
2451		
2452	1.8. Feynman diagrams of $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ in the Minimal Supersymmetric Standard Model (MSSM) without R-parity model. . . . .	42
2453		
2454	1.9. Feynman diagrams of $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ in the MSSM +seesaw mechanism model. . . . .	43
2455		
2456	1.10. Current and expected upper limits (red and purple horizontal lines) on the branching fractions of lepton flavour violating $\tau$ decay modes studied at the Belle II experiment, and predicted ranges at 90% CL in the vector leptoquark hypothesis for input masses $m_U = 1.5, 2.5, 3.5 \text{ TeV}/c^2$ (blue, yellow and green solid or dashed lines), Credits [63]. . . . .	45
2457		
2458		
2459		
2460		
2461	1.11. Feynman diagrams leading to $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ in the models introducing $Z'$ bosons. . . . .	46
2462		
2463	1.12. Upper limits on branching fractions at 90% CL for $\tau^-$ LFV decays: $\tau \rightarrow \ell \gamma$ , $\tau \rightarrow \ell P^0/S^0/V^0$ (neutral pseudoscalar, scalar or vector mesons), $\tau \rightarrow \ell \ell \ell$ , $\tau \rightarrow \ell h h$ (two hadrons) with $\ell = e, \mu$ . The green and orange marks correspond to expected upper limits at Belle II for integrated luminosities of $5 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ and $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ , the other to current limits from CLEO, ATLAS, CMS, LHCb, <i>BABAR</i> and Belle. Credits [67] . . . . .	47
2464		
2465		
2466		
2467		
2468		
2469	2.1. The schematic view of the asymmetric electron-positron collider SuperKEKB systems, from the electron and positron sources to the interaction point under Belle II. Credits [12] . . . . .	51
2470		
2471		

2472	2.2. View of the two beams colliding under the nano-beam scheme configuration: the effective beam size $d$ and the half-crossing angle $\phi$ . . . . .	53
2473		
2474	2.3. Feynman diagram of the $\tau$ -pair production in the electrons-positrons collider with a cross-section of 0.919 nb. . . . .	54
2475		
2476	2.4. Schematic three dimension view of the Belle II detector. Credits [12] . .	57
2477	2.5. Detailed longitudinal scheme view of the Belle II detector. Credits [12]	58
2478	2.6. Three-dimensional view of the two PiXel Detector (PXD) layers (left). Transverse scheme of the phase 3 PXD layout with one full layer and two ladders on the second (right). Credits [12] . . . . .	60
2479		
2480		
2481	2.7. The Belle II SVD already matched with the PXD and ready to be installed at the Interaction Point of the detector. Credits [84]. . . . .	60
2482		
2483	2.8. Schematic Layout of the SVD detector. In the left schematic, the yellow sensors are the wedge, green are the large sensors and blue the small ones. Credits [84]. . . . .	61
2484		
2485		
2486	2.9. Left: A quadrant of the drift chamber in $r\phi$ projection. The innermost superlayer confines eight layers, and all others contain six. Right: A scheme of stereo wires (bottom) relative to axial wires (top). The skew is exaggerated. Credits [86]. . . . .	63
2487		
2488		
2489		
2490	2.10. Schematic view of a Time-Of-Propagation (TOP) counter module (top) and representation of the internal reflecting Cherenkov photons emitted by a kaon or a pion (bottom). Credits [68] . . . . .	64
2491		
2492		
2493	2.11. Particle identification principle between $\pi$ and $K$ using the Aerogel Ring-Imaging Cherenkov (ARICH) counter. The cones shown in solid and dotted lines represent the Cherenkov light emitted by a pion and a kaon, respectively. Credits [88] . . . . .	64
2494		
2495		
2496		
2497	2.12. The dual-layer focusing scheme: (a) image of a normal Cherenkov counter with a single layer; (b) focusing with dual layer, in which different refractive indices of $n_1$ and $n_2$ such as ( $n_1 < n_2$ ) are used. Credits [88]	65
2498		
2499		
2500	2.13. Schematic overview of the outermost Belle II layers, particularly the KLM with its barrel, frontcap and endcap components. Credits [68] . .	67
2501		
2502	2.14. Scheme of the helix trajectory (tracks) in the Belle II detector transverse plane (left) and in the beam direction (right) with the track's parameters: the coordinates of the point of closest approach (POCA) $d_0$ , $z_0$ and the angles $\phi_0$ , $\lambda$ . The first PXD layer is displayed for visual guidance. . . . .	68
2503		
2504		
2505		
2506	2.15. Workflow of the two levels of the trigger system. The first stage is hardware-based and called L1, while the second relies on a fast software reconstruction and is called HLT. Credit [68] . . . . .	69
2507		
2508		
2509	2.16. Workflow for the event processing chain under Belle II Analysis Software Framework ( <i>basf2</i> ). Credits [96] . . . . .	71
2510		
2511	2.17. Recorded integrated luminosity per week and total through the phase 3 data taking from 2019 to 2022. Credits [99] . . . . .	73
2512		

2513	3.1. Scheme of the SVD sensors. The sensing strips are implanted in a Silicon bulk on the two sensor sides. Following the two sides, the strips are arranged orthogonally. So respectively, u/P (v/N) sides strips measure the position along the $r\phi$ ( $z$ ) direction. . . . .	77
2514		
2515		
2516		
2517	3.2. Simplified representation of the true position $x$ , reconstructed cluster position $m$ , extrapolated track position $t$ , true cluster residual $\varepsilon_m$ , true track residual $\varepsilon_t$ , and measured residual $R$ . Credits [110] . . . . .	78
2518		
2519		
2520	3.3. Distributions of the measured residuals $R$ (top left), true cluster residual $\varepsilon_m$ (top right), true track residual $\varepsilon_t$ (bottom right) and track extrapolation error $\sigma_t$ (bottom left), for the Layer 4 u/P side clusters from simulated di-muon events. Credits [110] . . . . .	79
2521		
2522		
2523		
2524	3.4. Layer 4 u/P side true cluster residual $\varepsilon_m$ vs true track residuals $\varepsilon_t$ (left) and $\varepsilon_m \cdot \varepsilon_t$ distribution (right). Credits [110] . . . . .	80
2525		
2526	3.5. Schematic view of the SVD volume in the $r\phi$ -direction with tracks passing through two consecutive sensors (internal and external) of the same layer called overlapping region. . . . .	83
2527		
2528		
2529	3.6. Position of activated strips by a hit of the u/P (left) and v/N (right) for each layer and the relative ladder's position of the overlap. . . . .	85
2530		
2531	3.7. Distribution of the Double residuals ( $\Delta R$ ) for each side and layer using di-muon data. . . . .	86
2532		
2533	3.8. Comparison of the double residual distributions before (blue) and after (orange) applying the fiducial area selection in experiment 14 sample. . . . .	88
2534		
2535	3.9. Fiducial area selection optimization for each layer to reduce the Data/MC discrepancy. . . . .	89
2536		
2537	3.10. Comparisons of the measured spatial resolution between data-exp14 in blue, Monte-Carlo simulations in orange and the true resolutions in green (internal sensor) and dark orange (external sensor) in top plots. The different resolutions are given in functions of SVD sides; u/P in left plots and v/N side in right plots; and layers. The bottom plots show the resolution ratio between data and simulations. . . . .	90
2538		
2539		
2540		
2541		
2542		
2543	3.11. Measured spatial resolutions (right) obtained for data (blue) and simulation (orange) following sides and layers. Measured resolutions divided by the sensor pitch (left) obtained for data (blue) and simulation (orange) following sides and layers. . . . .	91
2544		
2545		
2546		
2547	4.1. Diagrams of the $e^+e^- \rightarrow \tau^+\tau^-$ events reconstruction for the $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^-\ell^+\ell^-$ LFV decays in $3 \times 3$ -topology (up) and inclusive (down). . . . .	95
2548		
2549	4.2. Distribution of the number of good tracks (are defined as tracks with impact parameters $ dz  < 3\text{ cm}$ and $ dr  < 1\text{ cm}$ ) per event after the inclusive reconstruction (purple) and background rejection (red). The total absolute signal efficiency is 28.41% after the reconstruction and 19.70% after the background rejection. . . . .	96
2550		
2551		
2552		
2553		

2554	4.3. Fits of the $M_{3\mu}$ (top) and $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ (bottom) distributions using signal simulation. The fit curve is represented with a solid line. The vertical magenta lines represent the $3\delta$ region. . . . .	101
2555		
2556	4.4. Profile plots of the $M_{3\mu}$ vs $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ for the $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ final state for signal MC events. The correlation angle between signal region variables is extracted with a linear fit around $\Delta E = 0$ GeV where the signal is peaking.	103
2557		
2558	4.5. Distributions of $\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\mu$ simulated signal events in the $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$ plane. The edges of the $\pm 3, \pm 5$ and $\pm 20\delta$ regions defined from the previous fits are marked as green, yellow and black rectangles, respectively. The red rectangle represents the sidebands region, $\pm 20\delta$ in $M_{3\mu}$ and $\pm 10\delta$ in $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ . The corresponding elliptical regions are also shown. . .	104
2559		
2560	4.6. Trigger efficiency obtained from simulation for the $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ decays. The combination of trigger lines CDC, LML (LML*) and HIE are respectively $f_{y0}/f_{fy}$ , $l_{m10}/1/2/4/6/7/8/9/10/12/13$ ( $l_{m16}/7/8/9/10/12$ ) and $h_{ie}$ . . . . .	105
2561		
2562	4.7. Distributions of the three ranked leptonID in the signal side of the $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ MC signal and background sources (left: leading LID, right: subleading LID, bottom: third LID). The green area represents a cut at 0.95. . . . .	108
2563		
2564	4.8. Distribution of the sets of discriminated variables used to define several preliminary selections aiming to remove the low-multiplicity backgrounds. The green area represents the kept region after selection. . . .	109
2565		
2566	4.9. Comparison between the data and simulation for the polar angle of the missing momentum (left) and thrust axis magnitude (right) for events in the sideband region. . . . .	110
2567		
2568	4.10. Diagram of a binary decision tree. The blue rectangles represent the internal nodes and their associated splitting selection. The leaves are the terminal nodes and indicate their purity. . . . .	112
2569		
2570	4.11. Scheme of the Train sample split into K folds during the training procedure. . . . .	113
2571		
2572	4.13. Two-dimensional plots of the Optuna objective value, here logarithmic loss function of the last validation epoch, versus the values of the hyperparameters during the BDT optimisation for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ . At each Optuna trial, the algorithm chooses a set of parameters in the available ranges and trains a BDT. The logarithmic loss function is extracted from each model. A single point in each plot represents each trial. The best hyperparameter set is the lower point. . . . .	122
2573		
2574	4.14. Final background rejection performances, number of surviving backgrounds (blue), absolute signal efficiency (red) and the Punzi's figure of merit (cyan) for the Train and Test sample for the different preselection and signal region ( $3\delta$ rectangle or ellipse) setups. $\circ$ label is for the configuration evaluated in the elliptical signal region, while $\square$ is for the rectangular box one. . . . .	123
2575		
2576		
2577		
2578		
2579		
2580		
2581		
2582		
2583		
2584		
2585		
2586		
2587		
2588		
2589		
2590		
2591		
2592		
2593		
2594		
2595		
2596		

2597	4.15. Averaged BDT classifier probability output of being signal for Train and	
2598	Validation (left) or Test (right) samples. In the middle plot, the row	
2599	represents the Punzi figure of merit, evaluated on the Validation/Test	
2600	sample as a function of a selection on the BDT output. The bottom	
2601	plot represents the absolute signal efficiency (red) and remaining back-	
2602	ground (blue) scaled to $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ for Train (solid line) and Validation/Test	
2603	(dashed lines). The green area in both plots corresponds to values se-	
2604	lected as a result of the FOM optimisation in $5\delta$ Signal Region. . . . .	124
2605	4.16. Scatter plot of the different simulated background samples in coloured	
2606	dots and the signal in density map in the plan $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$ . The two-	
2607	dimensional distribution of the backgrounds is given at different steps of	
2608	the background rejection: after applying the nominal pre-selection (top)	
2609	and after applying the BDT classifier (bottom). The different definitions	
2610	of the signal region are given as reference: $20\delta$ SR (black box), SB (red	
2611	box) and the $5\delta$ and $3\delta$ ellipse SR. . . . .	127
2612	4.17. Average (solid line) and fluctuations (filled area) of the logarithmic loss	
2613	function as a function of the boosting rounds of the $K$ BDT classifiers	
2614	for the $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ channel. The quantity is estimated in both Train	
2615	(green) and Validation (blue) samples to visualise potential overfitting	
2616	effects. . . . .	128
2617	4.18. Profile plot of the averaged signal probability BDT output function of	
2618	the $M_\tau$ (left) and $\Delta E_\tau$ (right). . . . .	128
2619	4.19. Scatter plots (unweighted) of surviving events after preselection (left)	
2620	and selection on BDT signal probability output (right), in the $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$	
2621	sidebands region (red). The $\pm 5\delta$ box (yellow) is hidden for data to pre-	
2622	vent unblinding. The luminosity for background simulated samples is	
2623	half of the one listed in Table 2.6. . . . .	129
2624	4.20. Data-MC comparison in the $5 - 20(10)\delta$ sidebands of reconstructed	
2625	$\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ events for $M_\tau$ , $\Delta E_\tau$ and the BDT output probability $p_{BDT}$	
2626	after the preselection. The $q\bar{q}$ correction factor is applied in those plots.	130
2627	4.21. Data-MC comparison in the $5 - 20(10)\delta$ sidebands of reconstructed	
2628	$\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ events for $M_\tau$ , $\Delta E_\tau$ and the BDT output probability $p_{BDT}$	
2629	after the preselection and the BDT selection applied. . . . .	131
2630	4.22. Scatter plots (unweighted) of surviving events after applying the relaxed	
2631	LID at 0.5, preselection and selection on BDT signal probability output,	
2632	in the $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$ sidebands region (red) for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ . Data are	
2633	hidden in the $\pm 5\delta$ box (yellow) to prevent unblinding. The luminosity	
2634	for background simulated samples is half of the one listed in Table 2.6. . . . .	133
2635	4.23. Scatter plots (unweighted) of surviving events after applying the LID,	
2636	preselection, in the plane between the elliptical distance from the $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$	
2637	centre and the BDT signal probability output for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ . Red	
2638	dashed lines define the limit of the four ABCD regions. Data are hid-	
2639	den in D regions to prevent unblinding. The luminosity for background	
2640	simulated samples is half of the one listed in Table 2.6. . . . .	134



2641	4.24. Comparison between data and simulation for the variables entering in	
2642	the "ABCD" method: elliptical distance from the $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$ centre,	
2643	Eq. 4.8 (left) and the BDT signal probability output (right). . . . .	137
2644	4.25. Distribution of the leading momentum pion (top) and third momentum	
2645	pion (bottom) in data and simulation with the CDC or ECL triggers fired.	
2646	Trigger efficiency for the ECL and CDC and the discrepancy between	
2647	data and simulation. The trigger systematics is derived as the constant	
2648	fit of the discrepancy between data and simulation. . . . .	140
2649	4.26. Expected $CL_s$ as a function of the upper limit on the branching fraction	
2650	of $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ for statistics of $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ (left) and $424 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ (right). The	
2651	red line corresponds to the 90% confidence level. . . . .	144
2652	4.27. The future projection for the instantaneous (red) and integrated (blue)	
2653	luminosity until reaching the $50 \text{ ab}^{-1}$ scenario in 2035. Credits [99] . .	147
2654	28. Layer 4 u/P side track position extrapolation pulls $\varepsilon_t/\sigma_t$ . Credits [110]	148
2655	29. Layer 4 u/P side true cluster residual normalized distributions, fitted	
2656	with a single-gaussian for different ranges. Credits [110] . . . . .	149
2657	30. Estimators of the square root of the variance of the true position residual	
2658	for Layer 4 u/P side clusters as a function of the $\varepsilon_m$ ranges, from $\pm 30 \mu\text{m}$	
2659	to $\pm 1 \text{ mm}$ . Credits [110] . . . . .	150
2660	31. Schematic view in the $r\phi$ -direction of the external residual onto a paral-	
2661	lel plane to the internal ladder parallel to the tracks. . . . .	152
2662	32. Schematic view in the $z$ -direction, orthogonal to the internal ladder, of	
2663	the external residual onto a parallel plane to the internal ladder parallel	
2664	to the tracks. . . . .	153
2665	33. Projection of the u/P external residual contribution in the v/N projection	
2666	view 32. . . . .	154
2667	34. Double residuals distribution without (red) and with (blue) the geomet-	
2668	rical correction at the top, and the height bin difference between both	
2669	of the distributions at the bottom. The correction does not affect the	
2670	distribution so much because the correction factors are close to one. .	155
2671	34. Double residuals distribution without (red) and with (blue) the geomet-	
2672	rical correction at the top, and the height bin difference between both	
2673	of the distributions at the bottom. The correction does not affect the	
2674	distribution so much because the correction factors are close to one. .	156
2675	35. Difference between internal and external unbiased track position er-	
2676	ror for each side and layer for simulated samples, top for MC samples	
2677	and data in the bottom plots. Geometrical correction is applied when	
2678	subtracting the external track error. . . . .	157
2679	36. Comparison between: double true residual $\Delta\varepsilon_m$ , double track resid-	
2680	ual $\Delta\varepsilon_t$ , double residual $\Delta R$ , and the sum of double track residual and	
2681	double residual. . . . .	158

2682	37. Variables used as input to the BDT based background rejection for the	
2683	$\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ mode, ranked by their importance (best variable at the	
2684	bottom) computed as "the average gain of splits which use the fea-	
2685	ture"[117]. . . . .	162
2686	38. Signal distribution in the 2D plane defined by the mass squared of the	
2687	opposite charge muons. They are given after the reconstruction (top)	
2688	and after the background rejection (bottom). . . . .	163
2689	39. Data-MC comparison in the $5-20(10)\delta$ sidebands of reconstructed $\tau^- \rightarrow$	
2690	$\mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ events for BDT signal probability output, LID and variables are	
2691	taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection. . . . .	167
2692	40. Data-MC comparison in the $5-20(10)\delta$ sidebands of reconstructed $\tau^- \rightarrow$	
2693	$\mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ events for BDT signal probability output, LID and variables	
2694	taken as inputs to the BDT, after the preselection and BDT applied. . .	170

# List of Tables

2696	1.	Valeurs expérimentales sur la limite supérieure du taux de désintégration du canal du tauon en trois leptons à 90% de niveau de confiance établies par les expériences <i>BABAR</i> [7], Belle [8] et celles du Large Hadron Collider [9, 10, 11]. Les valeurs présentées sont des multiples de $10^8$ . . .	9
2697			
2698			
2699			
2700	2.	Résumé des résolutions spatiales obtenue avec les différentes méthodes essayées à Belle II [16]. . . . .	13
2701			
2702	3.	Taux de survie du signal et composition du bruit de fond pour $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ dans les échantillons générés par simulation après la reconstruction des événements $e^+e^- \rightarrow \tau^-\tau^+$ avec un lepton tau se désintégrant selon $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^-\mu^+\mu^-$ . . . . .	15
2703			
2704			
2705			
2706	4.	Résolutions obtenues avec l'ajustement des distributions $M_{3\mu}$ et $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ et utilisées comme unités pour définir les régions du signal. . . . .	15
2707			
2708	5.	Définition des différents sets de sélection préliminaires ainsi que leur efficacité sur le signal et la composition du bruit de fond survivant dans la région du signal $\pm 20\delta$ après avoir appliqué la sélection sur le muonID définit plus tôt. Le nombre d'événements de bruit de fond est normalisé à la luminosité des données $\Upsilon(4S)$ , $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ . Les variables considérées pour les sélections préliminaires sont : $\theta_{miss}^{CM}$ l'angle polaire de l'impulsion manquante, l'exposant $CM$ dénote qu'une quantité est mesuré dans le référentiel de centre de masse ; $p_{miss}^{T,CM}$ la composante trasverse à l'axe du faisceau de l'impulsion manquante ; $E_{vis}^{CM}$ énergie visible ; $\Delta E_{ROE}$ la différence d'énergie entre le ROE et la collision. . . . .	18
2709			
2710			
2711			
2712			
2713			
2714			
2715			
2716			
2717			
2718	6.	Liste de sélections appliquées pour rejeter le bruit de fond après optimisation. . . . .	18
2719			
2720	7.	Incertitudes systématiques relatives sur les différentes quantités de la formule du rapport d'embranchement. . . . .	20
2721			
2722	1.1.	Summary table of the upper limit on the $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^-\mu^+\mu^-$ branching fraction for different NP theoretical frameworks. . . . .	41
2723			
2724	1.2.	Observed upper limits at 90% C.L. on $\tau \rightarrow \ell\ell\ell$ branching fractions obtained by <i>BABAR</i> [7], Belle [8] and the LHC experiments. Values are given multiplied by $10^8$ . . . . .	47
2725			
2726			
2727	2.1.	Machine parameters for KEKB in its final configuration and for SuperKEKB in June 2022 and its final design. . . . .	52
2728			
2729	2.2.	Production cross section for the main physics processes of $e^+e^-$ collisions at $\sqrt{s} = m(\Upsilon(4S)) = 10.58 \text{ GeV}$ [12]. . . . .	54
2730			

2731	2.3. Geometrical details of the SVD double-sided strips sensors. All sensors	
2732	have one intermediate floating strip between two readout strips. . . . .	61
2733	2.4. Experimental datasets analysed in the following studies and their sta-	
2734	tistical uncertainty on integrated luminosities with their statistical and	
2735	systematic uncertainties [80]. . . . .	73
2736	2.5. Generators for each simulated physics process [100]. . . . .	74
2737	2.6. List of the background simulation samples with corresponding inte-	
2738	grated luminosities. . . . .	75
2739	3.1. Summary of the track selection criteria used for the different resolution	
2740	extraction methods. . . . .	82
2741	3.2. Estimated number of strips $N_{strips}$ of the u/P side in the overlapping	
2742	region for data. . . . .	85
2743	3.3. Fiducial area selection relying on the extrapolated track position $t$ (in	
2744	cm) projected in the u/P and v/N sides to remove tracks passing in	
2745	masked strips in the sensor edges. . . . .	87
2746	3.4. Number of clusters passing all selections. . . . .	89
2747	3.5. Spatial resolutions ( $\mu\text{m}$ ) results for data and simulations in the sensor	
2748	layer and side functions. Only statistical uncertainties are given. . . . .	90
2749	3.6. Summary of the digital (strip pitch based) and measured resolution on	
2750	data taken at the normal incidence for the Event-by-event and Global	
2751	methods [110, 16]. For the overlapping sensor method, the average on	
2752	the whole accessible angular range is shown. . . . .	92
2753	4.1. Selection criteria for charged particle lists. . . . .	98
2754	4.2. Fitted resolution for $M_{3\mu}$ and $\Delta E_{3\mu}$ used as units to define signal regions.	100
2755	4.3. Relative and absolute signal efficiencies and number of background	
2756	events retained after the reconstruction and after each offline require-	
2757	ments step for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ in the two simulated samples of $4 \text{ ab}^{-1}$	
2758	each, called train and test. The yields are normalized to $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ . $N_{bkg}$	
2759	is the sum of the individual background components. . . . .	106
2760	4.4. Efficiencies and background yields for several sets of preselection. The	
2761	number of background events is scaled to $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ retained in the $20\delta$	
2762	region after applying the muonID requirement. . . . .	110
2763	4.5. List of all the signal/background discriminating variables used as input	
2764	for BDT classifier algorithm. . . . .	115
2765	4.5. List of all the signal/background discriminating variables used as input	
2766	for BDT classifier algorithm. . . . .	116
2767	4.6. Definition and range value of the XGBoost BDT classifier hyperparame-	
2768	ters optimised to extract the best performances and avoid overfitting.	
2769	The range value for each parameter is chosen to be around the default	
2770	value. . . . .	121
2771	4.7. Final background rejection selection after optimizing the Punzi FOM on	
2772	the training sample. . . . .	122

2773	4.8. $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ signal efficiencies, background yields weighted for a luminosity of $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ and Punzi FOM for the train and test samples before and after applying the BDT selection. . . . .	125
2774		
2775	4.9. Simulation truth identification of final state particles for candidates passing the preliminary selection in the $3\delta$ SR. . . . .	126
2776		
2777	4.10. Simulation truth identification of final state particles for candidates passing the BDT selection in the $3\delta$ SR. . . . .	126
2778		
2779	4.11. Number of background events and their asymmetrical statistic errors left after the nominal background rejection selection in the different regions of the $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$ plane for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ with the sidebands method. . . . .	132
2780		
2781	4.12. Number of background events and their asymmetrical statistic errors left after the nominal background rejection selection in the different regions of the $(M_{3\mu}, \Delta E_{3\mu})$ plane for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ with the relaxed LID sidebands method. . . . .	133
2782		
2783	4.13. Number of backgrounds and their asymmetrical statistic errors after the nominal background rejection selection for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ with the ABCD method in data. . . . .	135
2784		
2785	4.14. Number of backgrounds and their asymmetrical statistic errors after the nominal background rejection selection for $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ with the ABCD method in simulation. . . . .	136
2786		
2787	4.15. Checks to control the unblinding risk in the different zone used for the ABCD method, using the simulation. An expected number of signals in each zone is obtained with the signal efficiency and assuming the branching fraction corresponding to the Belle limit. This number of signals is compared to the number of simulated backgrounds. . . . .	136
2788		
2789	4.16. Detailed signal efficiencies and deviation with the different LID correction variations. After applying the whole background rejection selections, the numbers are obtained in the Signal Region. . . . .	138
2790		
2791	4.17. Trigger efficiency discrepancy between data and simulations measured on the $\tau \rightarrow \pi\pi\pi\nu$ control sample. . . . .	141
2792		
2793	4.18. Detailed number of data events in the blind sidebands after applying the preselections for each variation of the momentum scale applied. Systematics uncertainties are derived from the difference in number of events. . . . .	142
2794		
2795	4.19. Relative systematic uncertainties entering the upper limit computation as a function of the decay mode. . . . .	142
2796		
2797	20. Position and width of the different double residuals, taken with the median and sigma-68 respectively in the MC sample for the Layer 4 u/P. . . . .	159
2798		
2799	21. Definitions of L1 low-multiplicity trigger lines (lmlX) used in Chapter 4. The centre of the mass frame is referred as "CM". . . . .	160
2800		
2801	22. Definitions of L1 CDC trigger lines used in Chapter 4. The centre of the mass frame is referred as "CM". . . . .	160
2802		
2803		
2804		
2805		
2806		
2807		
2808		
2809		
2810		
2811		
2812		
2813		
2814		
2815		

2816 23. Detailed background composition normalized to  $362 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  after applying  
2817 each set of preselection and LID requirements. . . . . 161

# 2818 Liste des acronymes

## 2819 **ARICH**

2820 Aerogel Ring-Imaging Cherenkov. [11](#), [62–65](#), [70](#), [173](#)

## 2821 ***basf2***

2822 *Belle II* Analysis Software Framework. [11](#), [71](#), [74](#), [173](#)

## 2823 **BDT**

2824 Boosted Decision Tree. [17–20](#), [93](#), [97](#), [102](#), [106](#), [107](#), [110](#), [111](#), [113–122](#), [124–131](#),  
2825 [133–135](#), [137](#), [146](#), [162](#), [165–171](#), [175–178](#), [180](#), [181](#)

## 2826 **BSM**

2827 Beyond Standard Model. [40](#), [46](#), [48](#)

## 2828 **CDC**

2829 Central Drift Chamber. [10](#), [15](#), [62](#), [68](#), [70](#), [98](#), [100](#), [138](#), [140](#), [160](#), [177](#), [181](#)

## 2830 **CKM**

2831 Cabibbo-Kobayashi-Maskawa. [35](#), [37](#)

## 2832 **CL**

2833 Confidence Level. [45–47](#), [97](#), [142](#), [172](#)

## 2834 **cLFV**

2835 charged Lepton Flavour Violation. [26](#), [39](#), [40](#), [43](#)

## 2836 **CoG**

2837 Center-of-Gravity. [77](#)

## 2838 **CP**

2839 Charged Parity. [34](#), [35](#), [49](#), [50](#)

## 2840 **CS**

2841 Control Sample. [139](#)

## 2842 **DEPFET**

2843 DEPLETED Field Effect Transistor. [59](#)

## 2844 **ECL**

2845 Electromagnetic CaLorimeter. [11](#), [15](#), [65](#), [66](#), [70](#), [71](#), [98](#), [99](#), [138](#), [140](#), [160](#), [177](#)

## 2846 **EW**

2847 ElectroWeak. [31–33](#)

- 2848 **HADP**  
2849 Hybrid Avalanche Photo-Detector. [65](#)
- 2850 **HER**  
2851 High Energy Ring. [10](#), [50](#)
- 2852 **HLT**  
2853 High Level Trigger. [69](#), [70](#)
- 2854 **ID**  
2855 IDentification. [98](#), [99](#)
- 2856 **IP**  
2857 Interaction Point. [52](#), [53](#), [56](#), [98](#), [124](#)
- 2858 **KLM**  
2859  $K_L$  and Muon detector. [11](#), [66](#), [67](#), [70](#), [107](#), [173](#)
- 2860 **LER**  
2861 Low Energy Ring. [10](#), [50](#)
- 2862 **LFU**  
2863 Lepton Flavour Universality. [44](#)
- 2864 **LFV**  
2865 Lepton Flavour Violation. [14](#), [26](#), [36](#), [39–41](#), [43–48](#), [72](#), [74](#), [94](#), [99](#), [100](#), [102](#), [139](#),  
2866 [143](#), [147](#), [163](#), [172](#)
- 2867 **LID**  
2868 Lepton IDentification. [98](#), [107](#), [108](#), [132–134](#), [138](#), [139](#), [175](#), [176](#), [181](#)
- 2869 **LS1**  
2870 Long Shutdown 1. [56](#), [73](#)
- 2871 **MC**  
2872 Monte-Carlo. [11](#), [17](#), [72](#), [74](#), [77](#), [81](#), [87](#), [97](#), [102](#), [103](#), [108](#), [114](#), [124](#), [130](#), [141](#), [143](#),  
2873 [146](#), [175](#)
- 2874 **MCP-PMTs**  
2875 Micro-Channel Plate PhotoMultiplier Tubes. [63](#)
- 2876 **MSSM**  
2877 Minimal Supersymmetric Standard Model. [42–44](#), [172](#)
- 2878 **NP**  
2879 New Physics. [34](#), [40](#), [41](#), [47](#), [163](#), [179](#)
- 2880 **PID**  
2881 Particle IDentification. [56](#), [62](#), [63](#), [66](#), [70](#)



- 2882 **PMNS**  
2883 Pontecorvo-Maki-Nakagawa-Sakata. [37–39](#), [41](#)
- 2884 **PXD**  
2885 PiXel Detector. [10](#), [56](#), [59](#), [60](#), [62](#), [68](#), [70](#), [76](#), [173](#)
- 2886 **QCD**  
2887 Quantum ChromoDynamics. [30](#), [32](#), [33](#)
- 2888 **QFT**  
2889 Quantum Field Theory. [29](#), [31](#), [34](#)
- 2890 **ROE**  
2891 Rest-of-Event. [15](#), [16](#), [18](#), [95](#), [99](#), [100](#), [111](#), [179](#)
- 2892 **SB**  
2893 Side Bands. [102](#), [127](#), [132](#), [176](#)
- 2894 **SM**  
2895 Standard Model. [26](#), [28–31](#), [33–45](#), [50](#), [74](#), [94](#), [147](#)
- 2896 **SR**  
2897 Signal Region. [102](#), [106](#), [117–121](#), [125–127](#), [132](#), [135](#), [176](#), [181](#)
- 2898 **SUSY**  
2899 SuperSymmetry. [41](#), [42](#)
- 2900 **SVD**  
2901 Silicon Vertex Detector. [10–12](#), [59](#), [61](#), [62](#), [68](#), [70](#), [76](#), [77](#), [80](#), [83](#), [84](#), [89–92](#), [151](#),  
2902 [171](#), [174](#), [180](#)
- 2903 **TOP**  
2904 Time-Of-Propagation. [11](#), [56](#), [62–64](#), [70](#), [173](#)
- 2905 **TSIM**  
2906 Trigger SIMulation. [74](#), [102](#)
- 2907 **UL**  
2908 Upper-Limit. [46](#)
- 2909 **VXD**  
2910 VerteX Detector. [10](#), [56](#), [59](#), [62](#)

# Bibliography

2911

- 2912 [1] W. N. Cottingham and D. A. Greenwood. *An Introduction to the Standard Model*  
2913 *of Particle Physics*. 2nd ed. Cambridge ; New York: Cambridge University Press,  
2914 2007. 272 pp. ISBN: 978-0-521-85249-4.
- 2915 [2] G. Hernández-Tomé, G. López Castro, and P. Roig. “Flavor Violating Leptonic  
2916 Decays of  $\tau$  and  $\mu$  Leptons in the Standard Model with Massive Neutrinos”.  
2917 In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 79.1 (Jan. 2019), p. 84. ISSN: 1434-6044, 1434-6052. DOI: [10.1140/epjc/s10052-019-6563-4](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-019-6563-4).  
2918
- 2919 [3] G. Hernández-Tomé, G. López Castro, and P. Roig. “Erratum to: Flavor Violating  
2920 Leptonic Decays of  $\tau$  and  $\mu$  Leptons in the Standard Model with Massive Neu-  
2921 trinos”. In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 80.5 (May 2020), p. 438. ISSN: 1434-6044, 1434-6052.  
2922 DOI: [10.1140/epjc/s10052-020-7935-5](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-020-7935-5).
- 2923 [4] Ana M. Teixeira. “Theoretical Aspects of Charged Lepton Flavour Violation”.  
2924 In: *J. Phys.: Conf. Ser.* 888 (Sept. 2017), p. 012029. ISSN: 1742-6588, 1742-6596.  
2925 DOI: [10.1088/1742-6596/888/1/012029](https://doi.org/10.1088/1742-6596/888/1/012029).
- 2926 [5] M. Giffels, J. Kallarackal, M. Krämer, et al. “Lepton-Flavor-Violating Decay  
2927  $\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\bar{\mu}$  at the LHC”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 77.7 (Apr. 28, 2008), p. 073010. ISSN:  
2928 1550-7998, 1550-2368. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevD.77.073010](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.77.073010).
- 2929 [6] Swagato Banerjee, Vincenzo Cirigliano, Mogens Dam, et al. “Snowmass 2021  
2930 White Paper: Charged Lepton Flavor Violation in the Tau Sector”. Version 2. In:  
2931 (2022). DOI: [10.48550/ARXIV.2203.14919](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.2203.14919).
- 2932 [7] J. P. Lees, V. Poireau, E. Prencipe, et al. “Limits on  $\tau$  Lepton-Flavor Violating  
2933 Decays into Three Charged Leptons”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 81.11 (June 10, 2010),  
2934 p. 111101. ISSN: 1550-7998, 1550-2368. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevD.81.111101](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.81.111101).
- 2935 [8] K. Hayasaka, K. Inami, Y. Miyazaki, et al. “Search for Lepton-Flavor-Violating  $\tau$   
2936 Decays into Three Leptons with 719 Million Produced  $\tau^+\tau^-$  Pairs”. In: *Physics*  
2937 *Letters B* 687.2-3 (Apr. 2010), pp. 139–143. ISSN: 03702693. DOI: [10.1016/j.physletb.2010.03.037](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.physletb.2010.03.037).  
2938
- 2939 [9] The LHCb collaboration, R. Aaij, B. Adeva, et al. “Search for the Lepton Flavour  
2940 Violating Decay  $\tau^- \rightarrow \mu^- \mu^+ \mu^-$ ”. In: *J. High Energ. Phys.* 2015.2 (Feb. 2015),  
2941 p. 121. ISSN: 1029-8479. DOI: [10.1007/JHEP02\(2015\)121](https://doi.org/10.1007/JHEP02(2015)121).
- 2942 [10] Atlas Collaboration, G. Aad, B. Abbott, et al. “Probing Lepton Flavour Violation  
2943 via Neutrinoless  $\tau \rightarrow 3\mu$  Decays with the ATLAS Detector”. In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 76.5  
2944 (May 2016), p. 232. ISSN: 1434-6044, 1434-6052. DOI: [10.1140/epjc/s10052-016-4041-9](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-016-4041-9).  
2945

- 2946 [11] The CMS collaboration, A. M. Sirunyan, A. Tumasyan, et al. “Search for the  
2947 Lepton Flavor Violating Decay  $\tau \rightarrow 3\mu$  in Proton-Proton Collisions at  $\sqrt{s} = 13$   
2948 TeV”. In: *J. High Energ. Phys.* 2021.1 (Jan. 2021), p. 163. ISSN: 1029-8479. DOI:  
2949 [10.1007/JHEP01\(2021\)163](https://doi.org/10.1007/JHEP01(2021)163).
- 2950 [12] E. Kou, P. Urquijo, W. Altmannshofer, et al. “The Belle II Physics Book”. In: *Prog.*  
2951 *Theor. Exp. Phys.* 2019.12 (Dec. 1, 2019), p. 1808.10567. ISSN: 2050-3911. DOI:  
2952 [10.1093/ptep/ptz106](https://doi.org/10.1093/ptep/ptz106). arXiv: [1808.10567](https://arxiv.org/abs/1808.10567) [hep-ex, physics:hep-lat,  
2953 physics:hep-ph].
- 2954 [13] Particle Data Group, P A Zyla, R M Barnett, et al. “Review of Particle Physics”.  
2955 In: *Prog. Theor. Exp. Phys.* 2020.8 (Aug. 14, 2020), p. 083C01. ISSN: 2050-3911.  
2956 DOI: [10.1093/ptep/ptaa104](https://doi.org/10.1093/ptep/ptaa104).
- 2957 [14] K. Adamczyk, L. Aggarwal, H. Aihara, et al. “The Design, Construction, Opera-  
2958 tion and Performance of the Belle II Silicon Vertex Detector”. In: *J. Inst.* 17.11  
2959 (Nov. 1, 2022), P11042. ISSN: 1748-0221. DOI: [10.1088/1748-0221/17/11/  
2960 P11042](https://doi.org/10.1088/1748-0221/17/11/P11042).
- 2961 [15] Cms Tracker Collaboration. “Stand-Alone Cosmic Muon Reconstruction before  
2962 Installation of the CMS Silicon Strip Tracker”. In: *J. Inst.* 4.05 (May 12, 2009),  
2963 P05004–P05004. ISSN: 1748-0221. DOI: [10.1088/1748-0221/4/05/P05004](https://doi.org/10.1088/1748-0221/4/05/P05004).
- 2964 [16] R. Leboucher, K. Adamczyk, L. Aggarwal, et al. “Measurement of the Clus-  
2965 ter Position Resolution of the Belle II Silicon Vertex Detector”. In: *Nuclear*  
2966 *Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrom-*  
2967 *eters, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 1033 (June 2022), p. 166746. ISSN:  
2968 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/j.nima.2022.166746](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2022.166746).
- 2969 [17] Belle II Collaboration, F. Abudinén, I. Adachi, et al. “Search for Lepton-Flavor-  
2970 Violating  $\tau^- \rightarrow \ell^- \phi$  Decays in 2019-2021 Belle II Data”. Version 3. In: (2023).  
2971 DOI: [10.48550/ARXIV.2305.04759](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.2305.04759).
- 2972 [18] Tianqi Chen and Carlos Guestrin. “XGBoost: A Scalable Tree Boosting System”.  
2973 In: *Proc. 22nd ACM SIGKDD Int. Conf. Knowl. Discov. Data Min.* KDD '16: The  
2974 22nd ACM SIGKDD International Conference on Knowledge Discovery and  
2975 Data Mining. San Francisco California USA: ACM, Aug. 13, 2016, pp. 785–794.  
2976 ISBN: 978-1-4503-4232-2. DOI: [10.1145/2939672.2939785](https://doi.org/10.1145/2939672.2939785).
- 2977 [19] F. Abudinén, M. Bertemes, S. Bilokin, et al. “Punzi-Loss: A Non-Differentiable  
2978 Metric Approximation for Sensitivity Optimisation in the Search for New Par-  
2979 ticles”. In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 82.2 (Feb. 2022), p. 121. ISSN: 1434-6044, 1434-6052.  
2980 DOI: [10.1140/epjc/s10052-022-10070-0](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-022-10070-0).
- 2981 [20] Avrim Blum, Adam Kalai, and John Langford. “Beating the Hold-out: Bounds  
2982 for K-fold and Progressive Cross-Validation”. In: *Proc. Twelfth Annu. Conf.*  
2983 *Comput. Learn. Theory.* COLT99: The 12th Annual Conference on Computation  
2984 Learning Theory. Santa Cruz California USA: ACM, July 6, 1999, pp. 203–208.  
2985 ISBN: 978-1-58113-167-3. DOI: [10.1145/307400.307439](https://doi.org/10.1145/307400.307439).

- 2986 [21] Takuya Akiba, Shotaro Sano, Toshihiko Yanase, et al. “Optuna: A Next-generation  
2987 Hyperparameter Optimization Framework”. Version 1. In: (2019). DOI: [10 .  
2988 48550/ARXIV .1907 .10902](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.1907.10902).
- 2989 [22] Suyong Choi and Hayoung Oh. “Improved Extrapolation Methods of Data-  
2990 Driven Background Estimations in High Energy Physics”. In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 81.7  
2991 (July 2021), p. 643. ISSN: 1434-6044, 1434-6052. DOI: [10 .1140/epjc/s10052-  
2992 021-09404-1](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-021-09404-1).
- 2993 [23] A L Read. “Presentation of Search Results: The  $CL_s$  Technique”. In: *J. Phys.  
2994 G: Nucl. Part. Phys.* 28.10 (Oct. 1, 2002), pp. 2693–2704. ISSN: 0954-3899. DOI:  
2995 [10 .1088/0954-3899/28/10/313](https://doi.org/10.1088/0954-3899/28/10/313).
- 2996 [24] Robert Zitoun. *Introduction à la physique des particules*. 2e éd. Paris: Dunod,  
2997 2009. ISBN: 978-2-10-048778-3.
- 2998 [25] *Physique des particules: introduction aux concepts et au formalisme du modèle  
2999 standard*. In collab. with Benoît Clément. 2e édition. Paris: Dunod, 2017. ISBN:  
3000 978-2-10-076171-5.
- 3001 [26] Matthew Dean Schwartz. *Quantum Field Theory and the Standard Model*. New  
3002 York: Cambridge University Press, 2014. 850 pp. ISBN: 978-1-107-03473-0.
- 3003 [27] Paul Langacker. *The Standard Model and Beyond*. S.l.: CRC PRESS, 2020. ISBN:  
3004 978-0-367-57344-7.
- 3005 [28] Léonard Polat. “Search for  $\tau \rightarrow \ell\phi$  Lepton Flavour Violating Decays and Fake  
3006 Tracks Rate Measurement with  $e^+e^- \rightarrow \tau^+\tau^-$  Events at the Belle II Experiment”.  
3007 Marseille, France: Aix-Marseille Université, 2020. URL: [https://docs.belle2.  
3008 org/record/3380?ln=en](https://docs.belle2.org/record/3380?ln=en).
- 3009 [29] Laura Zani. “Search for an Invisible  $Z'$  in  $\mu^+\mu^-$  plus Missing Energy Events  
3010 at Belle II”. Pisa, Italia: University of Pisa, 2020. URL: [https://docs.belle2.  
3011 org/record/1831?ln=en](https://docs.belle2.org/record/1831?ln=en).
- 3012 [30] Alberto Martini. “Search for Charged Lepton Flavour Violation in  $\tau \rightarrow 3\mu$  Chan-  
3013 nel at Belle II”. Roma, Italia: Università degli Studi Roma Tre, 2021. URL: [http:  
3014 //www.matfis.uniroma3.it/Allegati/Dottorato/TESI/amartini/  
3015 Search\\_for\\_charged\\_lepton\\_flavour\\_violation\\_in\\_tau3mu\\_at\\_  
3016 BelleII.pdf](http://www.matfis.uniroma3.it/Allegati/Dottorato/TESI/amartini/Search_for_charged_lepton_flavour_violation_in_tau3mu_at_BelleII.pdf).
- 3017 [31] Jean Iliopoulos. “Introduction to the STANDARD MODEL of the Electro-Weak  
3018 Interactions”. Version 1. In: (2013). DOI: [10 .48550/ARXIV .1305 .6779](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.1305.6779).
- 3019 [32] *Standard Model*. Wikipedia. URL: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/  
3020 Standard\\_Model](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Standard_Model).
- 3021 [33] Jeremy Bernstein. “Spontaneous Symmetry Breaking, Gauge Theories, the  
3022 Higgs Mechanism and All That”. In: *Rev. Mod. Phys.* 46.1 (Jan. 1, 1974), pp. 7–48.  
3023 ISSN: 0034-6861. DOI: [10 .1103/RevModPhys .46 .7](https://doi.org/10.1103/RevModPhys.46.7).

- 3024 [34] Nicola Cabibbo. “Unitary Symmetry and Leptonic Decays”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.*  
3025 10.12 (June 15, 1963), pp. 531–533. ISSN: 0031-9007. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevLett.](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.10.531)  
3026 [10.531](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.10.531).
- 3027 [35] Makoto Kobayashi and Toshihide Maskawa. “ $C P$ -Violation in the Renormal-  
3028 izable Theory of Weak Interaction”. In: *Prog. Theor. Phys.* 49.2 (Feb. 1973),  
3029 pp. 652–657. ISSN: 0033-068X. DOI: [10.1143/PTP.49.652](https://doi.org/10.1143/PTP.49.652).
- 3030 [36] Q. R. Ahmad, R. C. Allen, T. C. Andersen, et al. “Measurement of the Rate of  
3031  $\nu_e + d \rightarrow p + e^-$  Interactions Produced by  $^8B$  Solar Neutrinos at the Sudbury  
3032 Neutrino Observatory”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 87.7 (July 25, 2001), p. 071301. ISSN:  
3033 0031-9007, 1079-7114. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevLett.87.071301](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.87.071301).
- 3034 [37] Y. Fukuda, T. Hayakawa, E. Ichihara, et al. “Evidence for Oscillation of Atmo-  
3035 spheric Neutrinos”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 81.8 (Aug. 24, 1998), pp. 1562–1567. ISSN:  
3036 0031-9007, 1079-7114. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevLett.81.1562](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.81.1562).
- 3037 [38] G. Danby, J-M. Gaillard, K. Goulianos, et al. “Observation of High-Energy  
3038 Neutrino Reactions and the Existence of Two Kinds of Neutrinos”. In: *Phys. Rev.*  
3039 *Lett.* 9.1 (July 1, 1962), pp. 36–44. ISSN: 0031-9007. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevLett.](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.9.36)  
3040 [9.36](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.9.36).
- 3041 [39] K. Eguchi, S. Enomoto, K. Furuno, et al. “First Results from KamLAND: Evi-  
3042 dence for Reactor Antineutrino Disappearance”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 90.2 (Jan. 17,  
3043 2003), p. 021802. ISSN: 0031-9007, 1079-7114. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevLett.90.](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.90.021802)  
3044 [021802](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.90.021802).
- 3045 [40] C. Giganti, S. Lavignac, and M. Zito. “Neutrino Oscillations: The Rise of the  
3046 PMNS Paradigm”. In: *Progress in Particle and Nuclear Physics* 98 (Jan. 2018),  
3047 pp. 1–54. ISSN: 01466410. DOI: [10.1016/j.pnpnp.2017.10.001](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.pnpnp.2017.10.001).
- 3048 [41] Ivan Esteban, M. C. Gonzalez-Garcia, Michele Maltoni, et al. “The Fate of Hints:  
3049 Updated Global Analysis of Three-Flavor Neutrino Oscillations”. Version 1. In:  
3050 (2020). DOI: [10.48550/ARXIV.2007.14792](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.2007.14792).
- 3051 [42] *Neutrino Oscillation*. Wikipedia. URL: [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Neutrino_oscillation)  
3052 [Neutrino\\_oscillation](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Neutrino_oscillation).
- 3053 [43] Patrick Blackstone, Matteo Fael, and Emilie Passemar. “ $\tau \rightarrow \mu\mu\mu$  at a Rate of  
3054 One out of  $10^{14}$  Tau Decays?” In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 80.6 (June 2020), p. 506. ISSN:  
3055 1434-6044, 1434-6052. DOI: [10.1140/epjc/s10052-020-8059-7](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-020-8059-7).
- 3056 [44] Tong Li, Michael A. Schmidt, Chang-Yuan Yao, et al. “Charged Lepton Flavor  
3057 Violation in Light of the Muon Magnetic Moment Anomaly and Colliders”.  
3058 In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 81.9 (Sept. 2021), p. 811. ISSN: 1434-6044, 1434-6052. DOI:  
3059 [10.1140/epjc/s10052-021-09569-9](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-021-09569-9).
- 3060 [45] Benjamin M Dassinger, Thorsten Feldmann, Thomas Mannel, et al. “Model-  
3061 Independent Analysis of Lepton Flavour Violating  $\tau$  Decays”. In: *J. High Energy*  
3062 *Phys.* 2007.10 (Oct. 8, 2007), pp. 039–039. ISSN: 1029-8479. DOI: [10.1088/1126-](https://doi.org/10.1088/1126-6708/2007/10/039)  
3063 [6708/2007/10/039](https://doi.org/10.1088/1126-6708/2007/10/039).

- 3064 [46] Alejandro Celis, Vincenzo Cirigliano, and Emilie Passemar. “Model-Discriminating  
3065 Power of Lepton Flavor Violating  $\tau$  Decays”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 89.9 (May 13, 2014),  
3066 p. 095014. ISSN: 1550-7998, 1550-2368. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevD.89.095014](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.89.095014).
- 3067 [47] Yoshitaka Kuno and Yasuhiro Okada. “Muon Decay and Physics beyond the  
3068 Standard Model”. In: *Rev. Mod. Phys.* 73.1 (Jan. 12, 2001), pp. 151–202. ISSN:  
3069 0034-6861, 1539-0756. DOI: [10.1103/RevModPhys.73.151](https://doi.org/10.1103/RevModPhys.73.151).
- 3070 [48] M. Raidal, A. Van Der Schaaf, I. Bigi, et al. “Flavor Physics of Leptons and Dipole  
3071 Moments”. In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 57.1-2 (Sept. 2008), pp. 13–182. ISSN: 1434-6044,  
3072 1434-6052. DOI: [10.1140/epjc/s10052-008-0715-2](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-008-0715-2).
- 3073 [49] Bhubanjyoti Bhattacharya, Alakabha Datta, Jean-Pascal Guévin, et al. “Simul-  
3074 taneous Explanation of the  $R_K$  and  $R_{D^{(*)}}$  Puzzles: A Model Analysis”. In: *J.*  
3075 *High Energy Phys.* 2017.1 (Jan. 2017), p. 15. ISSN: 1029-8479. DOI: [10.1007/  
3076 JHEP01\(2017\)015](https://doi.org/10.1007/JHEP01(2017)015).
- 3077 [50] Ferruccio Feruglio, Paride Paradisi, and Andrea Pattori. “On the Importance  
3078 of Electroweak Corrections for B Anomalies”. Version 2. In: (2017). DOI: [10.  
3079 48550/ARXIV.1705.00929](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.1705.00929).
- 3080 [51] Ian Low. “T Parity and the Littlest Higgs”. In: *J. High Energy Phys.* 2004.10  
3081 (Oct. 29, 2004), pp. 067–067. ISSN: 1029-8479. DOI: [10.1088/  
3082 2004/10/067](https://doi.org/10.1088/1126-6708/2004/10/067).
- 3083 [52] Monika Blanke, Andrzej J Buras, Björn Duling, et al. “Charged Lepton Flavour  
3084 Violation and  $(g - 2)_\mu$  in the Littlest Higgs Model with T-Parity: A Clear Dis-  
3085 tinction from Supersymmetry”. In: *J. High Energy Phys.* 2007.05 (May 8, 2007),  
3086 pp. 013–013. ISSN: 1029-8479. DOI: [10.1088/1126-6708/2007/05/013](https://doi.org/10.1088/1126-6708/2007/05/013).
- 3087 [53] Monika Blanke, Andrzej J. Buras, Bjoern Duling, et al. “FCNC Processes in  
3088 the Littlest Higgs Model with T-Parity: An Update”. Version 2. In: (2009). DOI:  
3089 [10.48550/ARXIV.0906.5454](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.0906.5454).
- 3090 [54] R. Barbier, C. Bérat, M. Besançon, et al. “R-Parity-violating Supersymmetry”. In:  
3091 *Physics Reports* 420.1-6 (Nov. 2005), pp. 1–195. ISSN: 03701573. DOI: [10.1016/  
3092 j.physrep.2005.08.006](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.physrep.2005.08.006).
- 3093 [55] Chongxing Yue, Yanming Zhang, and Lanjun Liu. “Non-Universal Gauge Bosons  
3094  $Z'$  and Lepton Flavor-Violating Tau Decays”. In: *Physics Letters B* 547.3-4 (Nov.  
3095 2002), pp. 252–256. ISSN: 03702693. DOI: [10.1016/S0370-2693\(02\)02781-8](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0370-2693(02)02781-8).
- 3096 [56] K. S. Babu and Christopher Kolda. “Higgs-Mediated  $\tau \rightarrow 3\mu$  in the Supersym-  
3097 metric Seesaw Model”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 89.24 (Nov. 22, 2002), p. 241802. ISSN:  
3098 0031-9007, 1079-7114. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevLett.89.241802](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.89.241802).
- 3099 [57] S.T Petcov, S Profumo, Y Takanishi, et al. “Charged Lepton Flavor Violating De-  
3100 cays: Leading Logarithmic Approximation versus Full RG Results”. In: *Nuclear*  
3101 *Physics B* 676.1-2 (Jan. 2004), pp. 453–480. ISSN: 05503213. DOI: [10.1016/j.  
3102 nuclphysb.2003.10.020](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nuclphysb.2003.10.020).

- 3103 [58] Takeshi Fukuyama, Tatsuru Kikuchi, and Nobuchika Okada. “Lepton Flavor  
3104 Violating Processes and Muon  $g - 2$  in the Minimal Supersymmetric SO(10)  
3105 Model”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 68.3 (Aug. 26, 2003), p. 033012. ISSN: 0556-2821, 1089-  
3106 4918. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevD.68.033012](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.68.033012).
- 3107 [59] Andrea Brignole and Anna Rossi. “Lepton Flavour Violating Decays of Super-  
3108 symmetric Higgs Bosons”. In: *Physics Letters B* 566.3-4 (July 2003), pp. 217–225.  
3109 ISSN: 03702693. DOI: [10.1016/S0370-2693\(03\)00837-2](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0370-2693(03)00837-2).
- 3110 [60] G. Cvetič, C. Dib, C. S. Kim, et al. “Lepton Flavor Violation in Tau Decays”. In:  
3111 *Phys. Rev. D* 66.3 (Aug. 13, 2002), p. 034008. ISSN: 0556-2821, 1089-4918. DOI:  
3112 [10.1103/PhysRevD.66.034008](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.66.034008).
- 3113 [61] Abdesslam Arhrib, Rachid Benbrik, and Chuan-Hung Chen. “Lepton Flavor  
3114 Violating  $\tau$  Decays in the Type-III Seesaw Mechanism”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 81.11  
3115 (June 15, 2010), p. 113003. ISSN: 1550-7998, 1550-2368. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevD.  
3116 81.113003](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.81.113003).
- 3117 [62] Yi Cai, Tao Han, Tong Li, et al. “Lepton Number Violation: Seesaw Models and  
3118 Their Collider Tests”. In: *Front. Phys.* 6 (May 9, 2018), p. 40. ISSN: 2296-424X.  
3119 DOI: [10.3389/fphy.2018.00040](https://doi.org/10.3389/fphy.2018.00040).
- 3120 [63] C. Hati, J. Kriewald, J. Orloff, et al. “The Fate of  $V_1$  Vector Leptoquarks: The  
3121 Impact of Future Flavour Data”. In: *Eur. Phys. J. C* 81.12 (Dec. 2021), p. 1066.  
3122 ISSN: 1434-6044, 1434-6052. DOI: [10.1140/epjc/s10052-021-09824-z](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-021-09824-z).
- 3123 [64] Nima Arkani-Hamed, Andrew G Cohen, Emanuel Katz, et al. “The Minimal  
3124 Moose for a Little Higgs”. In: *J. High Energy Phys.* 2002.08 (Aug. 13, 2002),  
3125 pp. 021–021. ISSN: 1029-8479. DOI: [10.1088/1126-6708/2002/08/021](https://doi.org/10.1088/1126-6708/2002/08/021).
- 3126 [65] Hsin-Chia Cheng and Ian Low. “TeV Symmetry and the Little Hierarchy Prob-  
3127 lem”. In: *J. High Energy Phys.* 2003.09 (Sept. 21, 2003), pp. 051–051. ISSN: 1029-  
3128 8479. DOI: [10.1088/1126-6708/2003/09/051](https://doi.org/10.1088/1126-6708/2003/09/051).
- 3129 [66] CMS Collaboration. *Search for the Lepton Flavor Violating Decay Tau to 3mu in  
3130 Proton-Proton Collisions at Sqrt(s) = 13 TeV*. 2023. URL: [http://cds.cern.ch/  
3131 record/2860087](http://cds.cern.ch/record/2860087). preprint.
- 3132 [67] Swagato Banerjee, Vincenzo Cirigliano, Mogens Dam, et al. *Snowmass 2021  
3133 White Paper: Charged Lepton Flavor Violation in the Tau Sector*. May 26, 2022.  
3134 arXiv: [2203.14919](https://arxiv.org/abs/2203.14919) [hep-ex, physics:hep-ph]. URL: [http://arxiv.org/  
3135 abs/2203.14919](http://arxiv.org/abs/2203.14919). preprint.
- 3136 [68] T. Abe, I. Adachi, K. Adamczyk, et al. “Belle II Technical Design Report”. Ver-  
3137 sion 1. In: (2010). DOI: [10.48550/ARXIV.1011.0352](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.1011.0352).
- 3138 [69] A. J. Bevan, B. Golob, Th. Mannel, et al. “The Physics of the B Factories”. In:  
3139 *Eur. Phys. J. C* 74.11 (Nov. 2014), p. 3026. ISSN: 1434-6044, 1434-6052. DOI:  
3140 [10.1140/epjc/s10052-014-3026-9](https://doi.org/10.1140/epjc/s10052-014-3026-9).

- 3141 [70] Y. Ohnishi, T. Abe, T. Adachi, et al. “Accelerator Design at SuperKEKB”. In:  
3142 *Progress of Theoretical and Experimental Physics* 2013.3 (Mar. 26, 2013), 3A011–  
3143 ISSN: 2050-3911. DOI: [10.1093/ptep/pts083](https://doi.org/10.1093/ptep/pts083).
- 3144 [71] A. Abashian, K. Gotow, N. Morgan, et al. “The Belle Detector”. In: *Nuclear*  
3145 *Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrom-*  
3146 *eters, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 479.1 (Feb. 2002), pp. 117–232. ISSN:  
3147 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/S0168-9002\(01\)02013-7](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0168-9002(01)02013-7).
- 3148 [72] B. Aubert, D. Boutigny, I. De Bonis, et al. “Measurement of CP -Violating Asym-
- 3149 metries in  $B^0$  Decays to CP Eigenstates”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 86.12 (Mar. 19, 2001),  
3150 pp. 2515–2522. ISSN: 0031-9007, 1079-7114. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevLett.86.](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.86.2515)  
3151 [2515](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.86.2515).
- 3152 [73] B. Aubert, A. Bazan, A. Boucham, et al. “The BABAR Detector”. In: *Nuclear*  
3153 *Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrom-*  
3154 *eters, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 479.1 (Feb. 2002), pp. 1–116. ISSN:  
3155 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/S0168-9002\(01\)02012-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0168-9002(01)02012-5).
- 3156 [74] K. Abe, K. Abe, R. Abe, et al. “Observation of Large CP Violation in the Neutral  
3157 B Meson System”. In: *Phys. Rev. Lett.* 87.9 (Aug. 14, 2001), p. 091802. ISSN:  
3158 0031-9007, 1079-7114. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevLett.87.091802](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.87.091802).
- 3159 [75] SuperB Collaboration. *SuperB: A High-Luminosity Asymmetric  $e^+e^-$  Super*  
3160 *Flavor Factory. Conceptual Design Report*. Sept. 6, 2007. arXiv: [0709.0451](https://arxiv.org/abs/0709.0451)  
3161 [[hep-ex](https://arxiv.org/abs/0709.0451)]. URL: <http://arxiv.org/abs/0709.0451>. preprint.
- 3162 [76] SuperB Collaboration, M. Baszczyk, P. Dorosz, et al. “SuperB Technical Design  
3163 Report”. Version 1. In: (2013). DOI: [10.48550/ARXIV.1306.5655](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.1306.5655).
- 3164 [77] P.M. Lewis, I. Jaegle, H. Nakayama, et al. “First Measurements of Beam Back-  
3165 grounds at SuperKEKB”. In: *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Re-*  
3166 *search Section A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equip-*  
3167 *ment* 914 (Jan. 2019), pp. 69–144. ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/j.nima.2018.](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2018.05.071)  
3168 [05.071](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2018.05.071).
- 3169 [78] F. Abudinén, I. Adachi, P. Ahlburg, et al. “Measurement of the Integrated Lu-  
3170 minosity of the Phase 2 Data of the Belle II Experiment \*”. In: *Chinese Phys. C*  
3171 44.2 (Feb. 1, 2020), p. 021001. ISSN: 1674-1137, 2058-6132. DOI: [10.1088/1674-](https://doi.org/10.1088/1674-1137/44/2/021001)  
3172 [1137/44/2/021001](https://doi.org/10.1088/1674-1137/44/2/021001).
- 3173 [79] I. Adachi, P. Ahlburg, H. Aihara, et al. “Search for an Invisibly Decaying  $Z'$  Boson  
3174 at Belle II in  $e^+e^- \rightarrow \mu^+\mu^- (e^\pm\mu^\mp)$  Plus Missing Energy Final States”. In: *Phys.*  
3175 *Rev. Lett.* 124.14 (Apr. 6, 2020), p. 141801. ISSN: 0031-9007, 1079-7114. DOI:  
3176 [10.1103/PhysRevLett.124.141801](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevLett.124.141801).
- 3177 [80] *Measurement of the Integrated Luminosity of the Early Phase 3 Data of the*  
3178 *Belle II Experiment*. BELLE2-NOTE-PH-2022-056. Dec. 3, 2022. URL: [https:](https://docs.belle2.org/record/3346?ln=en)  
3179 [//docs.belle2.org/record/3346?ln=en](https://docs.belle2.org/record/3346?ln=en).



- 3180 [81] Francesco Forti. *Snowmass Whitepaper: The Belle II Detector Upgrade Program*.  
3181 Mar. 21, 2022. arXiv: [2203.11349](https://arxiv.org/abs/2203.11349) [hep-ex, physics:physics]. URL: <http://arxiv.org/abs/2203.11349>. preprint.  
3182
- 3183 [82] Leo Piilonen. “The Belle II Upgrade Program”. 31st International Symposium  
3184 on Lepton Photon Interactions at High Energies (Melbourne, Australia). July 19,  
3185 2023. URL: [https://indico.cern.ch/event/1114856/contributions/  
3186 5360199/](https://indico.cern.ch/event/1114856/contributions/5360199/).
- 3187 [83] H. Ye, F. Abudinen, K. Ackermann, et al. “Commissioning and Performance of  
3188 the Belle II Pixel Detector”. In: *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics  
3189 Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equip-  
3190 ment* 987 (Jan. 2021), p. 164875. ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/j.nima.2020.  
3191 164875](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2020.164875).
- 3192 [84] K. Adamczyk, L. Aggarwal, H. Aihara, et al. “The Design, Construction, Operation  
3193 and Performance of the Belle II Silicon Vertex Detector”. In: *J. Inst.* 17.11  
3194 (Nov. 1, 2022), P11042. ISSN: 1748-0221. DOI: [10.1088/1748-0221/17/11/  
3195 P11042](https://doi.org/10.1088/1748-0221/17/11/P11042).
- 3196 [85] T.V. Dong, S. Uno, M. Uchida, et al. “Calibration and Alignment of the Belle  
3197 II Central Drift Chamber”. In: *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics  
3198 Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equip-  
3199 ment* 930 (June 2019), pp. 132–141. ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/j.nima.  
3200 2019.03.072](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2019.03.072).
- 3201 [86] Valerio Bertacchi, Tadeas Bilka, Nils Braun, et al. “Track Finding at Belle II”. In:  
3202 *Computer Physics Communications* 259 (Feb. 2021), p. 107610. ISSN: 00104655.  
3203 DOI: [10.1016/j.cpc.2020.107610](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cpc.2020.107610).
- 3204 [87] Umberto Tamponi. “The TOP Counter of Belle II: Status and First Results”. In:  
3205 *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators,  
3206 Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 952 (Feb. 2020), p. 162208.  
3207 ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/j.nima.2019.05.049](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2019.05.049).
- 3208 [88] S. Iwata, I. Adachi, K. Hara, et al. “Particle Identification Performance of the  
3209 Prototype Aerogel RICH Counter for the Belle II Experiment”. In: *Prog. Theor.  
3210 Exp. Phys.* 2016.3 (Mar. 2016), 033H01. ISSN: 2050-3911. DOI: [10.1093/ptep/  
3211 ptw005](https://doi.org/10.1093/ptep/ptw005).
- 3212 [89] R. Pestotnik, I. Adachi, R. Dolenc, et al. “The Aerogel Ring Imaging Cherenkov  
3213 System at the Belle II Spectrometer”. In: *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in  
3214 Physics Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated  
3215 Equipment* 876 (Dec. 2017), pp. 265–268. ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/j.  
3216 nima.2017.04.043](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2017.04.043).

- 3217 [90] V. Aulchenko, A. Bobrov, B.G. Cheon, et al. “Development of Data Acquisition  
3218 System for Belle II Electromagnetic Calorimeter”. In: *Nuclear Instruments and  
3219 Methods in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors  
3220 and Associated Equipment* 1030 (May 2022), p. 166468. ISSN: 01689002. DOI:  
3221 [10.1016/j.nima.2022.166468](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2022.166468).
- 3222 [91] J.-F. Krohn, F. Tenchini, P. Urquijo, et al. “Global Decay Chain Vertex Fitting  
3223 at Belle II”. In: *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section  
3224 A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 976 (Oct.  
3225 2020), p. 164269. ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/j.nima.2020.164269](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2020.164269).
- 3226 [92] Alexander Glazov, Petar Rados, Ami Rostomyan, et al. *Measurement of the  
3227 Tracking Efficiency in Phase 3 Data Using Tau-Pair Events*. BELLE2-NOTE-PH-  
3228 2020-006. July 20, 2020. URL: [https://docs.belle2.org/record/1867/  
3229 files/BELLE2-NOTE-PH-2020-006%20%28ICHEP%29%20-%20reviewed.  
3230 pdf](https://docs.belle2.org/record/1867/files/BELLE2-NOTE-PH-2020-006%20%28ICHEP%29%20-%20reviewed.pdf).
- 3231 [93] Y. Iwasaki, ByungGu Cheon, Eunil Won, et al. “Level 1 Trigger System for the  
3232 Belle II Experiment”. In: *IEEE Trans. Nucl. Sci.* 58.4 (Aug. 2011), pp. 1807–1815.  
3233 ISSN: 0018-9499, 1558-1578. DOI: [10.1109/TNS.2011.2119329](https://doi.org/10.1109/TNS.2011.2119329).
- 3234 [94] S Lee, R Itoh, T Higuchi, et al. “Belle-II High Level Trigger at SuperKEKB”. In: *J.  
3235 Phys.: Conf. Ser.* 396.1 (Dec. 13, 2012), p. 012029. ISSN: 1742-6588, 1742-6596.  
3236 DOI: [10.1088/1742-6596/396/1/012029](https://doi.org/10.1088/1742-6596/396/1/012029).
- 3237 [95] Charged PID Group. *Muon and Electron Identification Efficiencies and Hadron-  
3238 Lepton Mis-Identification Rates at Belle II for Moriond 2022*. BELLE2-CONF-PH-  
3239 2022-003. Mar. 15, 2022. URL: [https://docs.belle2.org/record/2895?  
3240 ln=en](https://docs.belle2.org/record/2895?ln=en).
- 3241 [96] *Belle II Software Documentation*. URL: [https://software.belle2.org/  
3242 development/sphinx/index.html](https://software.belle2.org/development/sphinx/index.html).
- 3243 [97] T. Kuhr, C. Pulvermacher, M. Ritter, et al. “The Belle II Core Software: Belle II  
3244 Framework Software Group”. In: *Comput Softw Big Sci* 3.1 (Dec. 2019), p. 1.  
3245 ISSN: 2510-2036, 2510-2044. DOI: [10.1007/s41781-018-0017-9](https://doi.org/10.1007/s41781-018-0017-9).
- 3246 [98] Rene Brun and Fons Rademakers. “ROOT - An Object Oriented Data Analysis  
3247 Framework”. In: *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section  
3248 A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 389.1-2 (Apr.  
3249 1997), pp. 81–86. ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/S0168-9002\(97\)00048-X](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0168-9002(97)00048-X).
- 3250 [99] *Belle II Luminosity*. Belle II Luminosity. 2023. URL: [https://confluence.  
3251 desy.de/display/BI/Belle+II+Luminosity](https://confluence.desy.de/display/BI/Belle+II+Luminosity).
- 3252 [100] Sw. Banerjee, D. Biswas, T. Przedzinski, et al. “Monte Carlo Event Generator  
3253 Updates, for Tau Pair Events at Belle II Energies”. Version 1. In: (2021). DOI:  
3254 [10.48550/ARXIV.2111.05914](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.2111.05914).

- 3255 [101] David J. Lange. “The EvtGen Particle Decay Simulation Package”. In: *Nuclear*  
3256 *Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators, Spectrom-*  
3257 *eters, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 462.1-2 (Apr. 2001), pp. 152–155.  
3258 ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/S0168-9002\(01\)00089-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0168-9002(01)00089-4).
- 3259 [102] Torbjörn Sjöstrand, Stefan Ask, Jesper R. Christiansen, et al. “An Introduction to  
3260 PYTHIA 8.2”. In: *Computer Physics Communications* 191 (June 2015), pp. 159–  
3261 177. ISSN: 00104655. DOI: [10.1016/j.cpc.2015.01.024](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cpc.2015.01.024).
- 3262 [103] S. Jadach, B.F.L. Ward, and Z. Wař. “The Precision Monte Carlo Event Generator  
3263 for Two-Fermion Final States in Collisions”. In: *Computer Physics Communi-*  
3264 *cations* 130.3 (Aug. 2000), pp. 260–325. ISSN: 00104655. DOI: [10.1016/S0010-](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0010-4655(00)00048-5)  
3265 [4655\(00\)00048-5](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0010-4655(00)00048-5).
- 3266 [104] N. Davidson, G. Nanava, T. Przedziński, et al. “Universal Interface of TAUOLA:  
3267 Technical and Physics Documentation”. In: *Computer Physics Communications*  
3268 183.3 (Mar. 2012), pp. 821–843. ISSN: 00104655. DOI: [10.1016/j.cpc.2011.](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cpc.2011.12.009)  
3269 [12.009](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.cpc.2011.12.009).
- 3270 [105] C.M. Carloni Calame, C. Lunardini, G. Montagna, et al. “Large-Angle Bhabha  
3271 Scattering and Luminosity at Flavour Factories”. In: *Nuclear Physics B* 584.1-2  
3272 (Sept. 2000), pp. 459–479. ISSN: 05503213. DOI: [10.1016/S0550-3213\(00\)](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0550-3213(00)00356-4)  
3273 [00356-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0550-3213(00)00356-4).
- 3274 [106] G. Balossini, C. Bignamini, C.M. Carloni Calame, et al. “Photon Pair Production  
3275 at Flavour Factories with per Mille Accuracy”. In: *Physics Letters B* 663.3 (May  
3276 2008), pp. 209–213. ISSN: 03702693. DOI: [10.1016/j.physletb.2008.04.007](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.physletb.2008.04.007).
- 3277 [107] F.A. Berends, P.H. Daverveldt, and R. Kleiss. “Complete Lowest-Order Calcula-  
3278 tions for Four-Lepton Final States in Electron-Positron Collisions”. In: *Nuclear*  
3279 *Physics B* 253 (Jan. 1985), pp. 441–463. ISSN: 05503213. DOI: [10.1016/0550-](https://doi.org/10.1016/0550-3213(85)90541-3)  
3280 [3213\(85\)90541-3](https://doi.org/10.1016/0550-3213(85)90541-3).
- 3281 [108] S. Agostinelli, J. Allison, K. Amako, et al. “Geant4—a Simulation Toolkit”. In:  
3282 *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section A: Accelerators,*  
3283 *Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 506.3 (July 2003), pp. 250–  
3284 303. ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10.1016/S0168-9002\(03\)01368-8](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0168-9002(03)01368-8).
- 3285 [109] *Opera-3D User Guide*. Ver. 15R3. Oxford, England: Cobham Technical Services,  
3286 Vector Fields Software.
- 3287 [110] G Casarosa, G Dujany, Ch Finck, et al. *Measurement of the SVD Cluster Position*  
3288 *Resolution*. BELLE2-NOTE-TE-2022-005. Mar. 16, 2022.
- 3289 [111] Jerome Baudot and Pierre Billoir, director. *GDR-Intensity Frontier Lectures:*  
3290 *Tracking Detectors and Algorithms*. Nov. 22, 2021. URL: [https://indico.](https://indico.in2p3.fr/event/25006/)  
3291 [in2p3.fr/event/25006/](https://indico.in2p3.fr/event/25006/).
- 3292 [112] Student. “The Probable Error of a Mean”. In: *Biometrika* 6.1 (Mar. 1908), p. 1.  
3293 ISSN: 00063444. DOI: [10.2307/2331554](https://doi.org/10.2307/2331554). JSTOR: 2331554.

- 3294 [113] Thomas Junk. “Confidence Level Computation for Combining Searches with  
3295 Small Statistics”. Version 1. In: (1999). DOI: [10 . 48550 / ARXIV . HEP - EX /](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.HEP-EX/9902006)  
3296 [9902006](https://doi.org/10.48550/ARXIV.HEP-EX/9902006).
- 3297 [114] Robin Leboucher. *Good Track Selection for Tau Events*. BELLE2-NOTE-PH-2020-  
3298 029. June 9, 2020. URL: <https://docs.belle2.org/record/1946?ln=en>.
- 3299 [115] J.-F. Krohn, F. Tenchini, P. Urquijo, et al. “Global Decay Chain Vertex Fitting  
3300 at Belle II”. In: *Nuclear Instruments and Methods in Physics Research Section*  
3301 *A: Accelerators, Spectrometers, Detectors and Associated Equipment* 976 (Oct.  
3302 2020), p. 164269. ISSN: 01689002. DOI: [10 . 1016/j . nima . 2020 . 164269](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.nima.2020.164269).
- 3303 [116] W. Verkerke and D. Kirkby. *Roofit Users Manual v2.91*. Oct. 14, 2008. URL:  
3304 [https://root.cern/download/doc/RooFit\\_Users\\_Manual\\_2.91-33.](https://root.cern/download/doc/RooFit_Users_Manual_2.91-33.pdf)  
3305 [pdf](https://root.cern/download/doc/RooFit_Users_Manual_2.91-33.pdf).
- 3306 [117] *XGBoost Documentation*. URL: [https://xgboost.readthedocs.io/en/](https://xgboost.readthedocs.io/en/stable/)  
3307 [stable/](https://xgboost.readthedocs.io/en/stable/).
- 3308 [118] Paolo Calafiura, David Rousseau, and Kazuhiro Terao. *Artificial Intelligence for*  
3309 *High Energy Physics*. WORLD SCIENTIFIC, Mar. 2022. ISBN: 9789811234026.  
3310 DOI: [10 . 1142/12200](https://doi.org/10.1142/12200).
- 3311 [119] R. Aaij, B. Adeva, M. Adinolfi, et al. “Search for Long-Lived Scalar Particles in  
3312  $B^+ \rightarrow K^+ \chi(\mu^+ \mu^-)$  Decays”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 95.7 (Apr. 14, 2017), p. 071101. ISSN:  
3313 2470-0010, 2470-0029. DOI: [10 . 1103/PhysRevD . 95 . 071101](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.95.071101).
- 3314 [120] James Bergstra, James Bergstra, Yoshua Bengio, et al. “Algorithms for Hyper-  
3315 Parameter Optimization”. In: *Advances in Neural Information Processing Sys-*  
3316 *tems 24 (NIPS 2011)*. Granada, Spain, 2011. ISBN: 978-1-61839-599-3.
- 3317 [121] Gregor Kasieczka, Benjamin Nachman, Matthew D. Schwartz, et al. “Automat-  
3318 ing the ABCD Method with Machine Learning”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 103.3 (Feb. 22,  
3319 2021), p. 035021. ISSN: 2470-0010, 2470-0029. DOI: [10 . 1103/PhysRevD . 103 .](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.103.035021)  
3320 [035021](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.103.035021).
- 3321 [122] Swarna Prabha Maharana. *Charged Particle Identification Performances in*  
3322 *Belle II*. BELLE2-CONF-PROC-2023-027. July 12, 2023.
- 3323 [123] Petar Rados, Ami Rostomyan, and Alberto Martini. *Measurement of the Trigger*  
3324 *Efficiency in Phase 3 Data Using Tau-Pair Events*. BELLE2-NOTE-PH-2020-028.  
3325 June 9, 2020. URL: <https://docs.belle2.org/record/1944?ln=en>.
- 3326 [124] Qi-Dong Zhou. *Correction for Tracking Momentum Bias Based on Invariant*  
3327 *Mass Peak Studies*. BELLE2-NOTE-PH-2020-030. June 10, 2020. URL: [https://](https://docs.belle2.org/record/1947)  
3328 [docs.belle2.org/record/1947](https://docs.belle2.org/record/1947).
- 3329 [125] Swagato Banerjee, Bolek Pietrzyk, J. Michael Roney, et al. “Tau and Muon Pair  
3330 Production Cross Sections in Electron-Positron Annihilations at  $s = 10.58$  GeV”.  
3331 In: *Phys. Rev. D* 77.5 (Mar. 13, 2008), p. 054012. ISSN: 1550-7998, 1550-2368. DOI:  
3332 [10 . 1103/PhysRevD . 77 . 054012](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.77.054012).

- 3333 [126] Kyle Cranmer, George Lewis, Lorenzo Moneta, et al. *HistFactory: A Tool for*  
3334 *Creating Statistical Models for Use with RooFit and RooStats*. CERN-OPEN-  
3335 2012-016. 2012. URL: <https://cds.cern.ch/record/1456844>.
- 3336 [127] Gary J. Feldman and Robert D. Cousins. “Unified Approach to the Classical Sta-  
3337 tistical Analysis of Small Signals”. In: *Phys. Rev. D* 57.7 (Apr. 1, 1998), pp. 3873–  
3338 3889. ISSN: 0556-2821, 1089-4918. DOI: [10.1103/PhysRevD.57.3873](https://doi.org/10.1103/PhysRevD.57.3873).
- 3339 [128] E Kou, P Urquijo, W Altmannshofer, et al. “The Belle II Physics Book”. In:  
3340 *Prog. Theor. Exp. Phys.* 2019.12 (Dec. 1, 2019), p. 123C01. ISSN: 2050-3911. DOI:  
3341 [10.1093/ptep/ptz106](https://doi.org/10.1093/ptep/ptz106).
- 3342 [129] A.Yu. Barnyakov. “The Project of the Super Charm-Tau Factory in Novosibirsk”.  
3343 In: *J. Phys.: Conf. Ser.* 1561.1 (June 1, 2020), p. 012004. ISSN: 1742-6588, 1742-  
3344 6596. DOI: [10.1088/1742-6596/1561/1/012004](https://doi.org/10.1088/1742-6596/1561/1/012004).
- 3345 [130] Xiao-Rui Lyu and STCF working group. “Physics Program of the Super Tau-  
3346 Charm Factory”. In: *Proc. 19th Int. Conf. B-Phys. Front. Mach. — PoSBEAUTY2020*.  
3347 19th International Conference on B-Physics at Frontier Machines. Kashiwa,  
3348 Japan (online): Sissa Medialab, Oct. 7, 2021, p. 060. DOI: [10.22323/1.391.0060](https://doi.org/10.22323/1.391.0060).
- 3350 [131] C C Ahdida, I Bezshyiko, A Buonauro, et al. “TauFV: A Fixed-Target Experiment  
3351 to Search for Flavour Violation in Tau Decays”. In: ().